

Satanic Crime: A Threat in the New Millennium

For several decades mainstream media outlets have been hesitant to report crimes which involve Satanism. When such incidents do receive coverage the diabolical aspects of the story are hardly touched upon and tend to never be followed up with further investigation. *Satanic Crime* is the first book to pull many of these under-reported stories together and offers a birds-eye-view of Devil Worshipers who commit murders. This is also the first study to examine the links between elite Luciferian secret societies and Satanic serial killers.

Case studies include; Charles Manson, “Son of Sam” David Berkowitz, “Night Stalker” Richard Ramirez, Satanic killer Ricky Kasso, “Norway’s Wolfman” Varg Vikernes, Joe Fiorella who committed an act of ritual necrophilia, Columbine killers Harris and Kleobold, “Angel of Death” Jeff Weise, Rodrigo Orias who decapitated a Catholic priest for Lucifer, Andrea Volpe who ritually murdered a girl who he saw as a personification of the Virgin Mary.

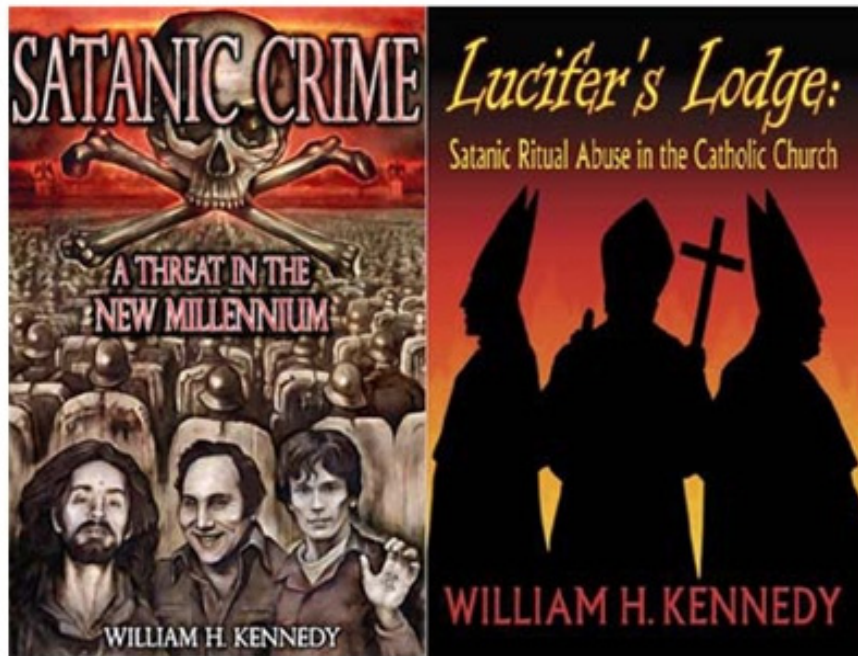
Links between the Skull and Bones Society, Bohemian Grove and White House “journalist” Jeff Gannon are investigated as well as the connection between the Bilderberg Group and Belgium’s Satanic child pornographer Marc Dutroux.

Bonus Features: Access to the Satanic Crime Multimedia Section with hours of free film documentaries and audios related to the Satanic case studies. Solidly documented from published sources, *Satanic Crime* answers the questions:

“Why does the mainstream media avoid reporting on Satanism?”

“What association do major world leaders have with Devil Worship?”

Be prepared for the Shock of your Life!



Mystic Valley Media

Special Announcement!

The artists Jesse Bercowetz and Matt Bua chose William H. Kennedy's work for their exhibition *Things Got Legs* which ran at the Derek Eller Gallery in NYC September 7 - October 14, 2006. The theme of the exhibit focused on contemporary society's fascination with conspiracies and included book covers and sound recordings from Alexandra Chica Bruce, Peter Levenda, David McGowan, Uri Geller and Don Paul.

William H. Kennedy's two book covers from *Lucifer's Lodge: Satanic Ritual Abuse in the Catholic Church* (2004) and *Satanic Crime: A Threat in the New Millennium* (2006) were included in the exhibit as well as specially recorded excerpts of W.H.K. describing modern Satanism.

Things Got Legs web page: <http://www.overcoat.org/legs/legs.html>

WHK's online exhibit: <http://www.overcoat.org/legs/legs12.html>

(URLs are archived at <http://www.archive.org>)

Mystic Valley Media
Special Announcement 2!

Adam Scott Miller - the artist who designed the cover for *Satanic Crime* - has won a prestigious scholarship for an MFA from the *Fine Arts Work Center* in Provincetown, Massachusetts. Adam was selected from 1000s of applicants from around the world for this three-year program.

I am absolutely certain that Adam would have won the scholarship even if I did not commission this work; I am pleased that he used the cover in the portfolio he submitted to win the scholarship. I plan to commission Adam for more covers for Mystic Valley Media books because I feel he is, without a doubt, the greatest “gothedelic” artist on the planet!

William H. Kennedy

“Hearty Congratulations to Adam! An excellent cover for an excellent book.”

Brad Steiger

About the Author

William H. Kennedy (b. 1964) is a writer and speaker on religious topics. Kennedy has written articles for academic journals, such as *Sophia: the Journal of Traditional Studies* and popular magazines like *Dagobert's Revenge & New Dawn*. In 2004, Kennedy authored *Lucifer's Lodge: Satanic Ritual Abuse in the Catholic Church* (Sophia Perennis Press). Many of his themes center on occult secret societies and their influence on contemporary politics and economics.

Kennedy is a popular guest on television and radio programs in the U.S., Canada and Europe. He has appeared on *The Learning Channel*, *ITV Meridian News (U.K.)*, *A Closer Look*, *The 'X' Zone (Canada)*, *The Alex Jones Show*, *The Jeff Rense Show*, *Deadline Live*, *The Zeph Report* and *Radio Liberty*.

In 2005 Kennedy launched his own Internet based radio show *Sphinx Radio* which focuses on paranormal and conspiracy related subjects.

Mystic Valley Media

© 2006 William H. Kennedy All Rights Reserved

Satanic Crime

A Threat in the New Millennium

William H. Kennedy

For Rama P. Coomaraswamy, MD

(1929-2006)

Acknowledgments

The Following people were instrumental in the production of *Satanic Crime: A Threat in the New Millennium*; Eleanor P. Kennedy, Christopher J. Kennedy, Michael Corbin, Adam Scott Miller, Aly Walansky, Steven Hines, Brad Steiger, Vincent T. Bugliosi, Philip Carlo, Alex Merklinger, Mark Farha, Frank Whalen, Mike Sallah, Phillip Johnson, Rob McConnell, Michael Holliday, Dr. Stan Monteith and Jack Blood.

Table of Contents

<i>A Brief History of Modern Satanism ...</i>	<i>1</i>
<i>Manson Family Values ...</i>	<i>16</i>
<i>Twenty-two Disciples of Hell ...</i>	<i>29</i>
<i>Night Stalker ...</i>	<i>39</i>
<i>Say You Love Satan...</i>	<i>50</i>
<i>The Boy Who Cried Wolf ...</i>	<i>59</i>
<i>Necrophilia in Suburbia ...</i>	<i>69</i>
<i>Lucifer at Columbine...</i>	<i>79</i>
<i>Angel of Death...</i>	<i>88</i>
<i>The Blessed Virgin and the Beasts of Satan ...</i>	<i>99</i>
<i>Murder in the Cathedral...</i>	<i>115</i>
<i>Belgium Waffles ...</i>	<i>127</i>
<i>Raising Hell...</i>	<i>138</i>

Extra Features

Satanic Crime Multimedia Page:

Access hours of free films, audio files & photos on the case studies covered in
this book: <http://www.mysticvalleymedia.com>

William H. Kennedy Radio Interview Archive:

<http://www.williamhkennedy.com/radio.html>

Sphinx Radio hosted by William H. Kennedy:

<http://www.sphinxradio.com>

(URLs are archived at <http://www.archive.org>)

1

A Brief History of Modern Satanism

The ultimate concern of this examination is to trace the history of Satanism from its roots in Victorian occultism through its emergence in the post-World War II era, and to assess the various threats this movement poses to society in the new millennium.

To this end, a provisional definition of Satanism is necessary. Satanism may be defined as a belief system which seeks to venerate the Fallen Angel Lucifer, either as a metaphysical being or as a metaphor. That some Satanists see the Devil purely as a symbol while others as a genuine spiritual entity turns out to be irrelevant when considering the underlying theology and long-term goals of this movement. Although many factors contributed to the growth of this diabolical belief system over the centuries, the contemporary movement can be traced to the activities of one individual who gave shape to the modern world of Satanism.

Aleister Crowley: The Godfather of Modern Satanism

In any discussion of contemporary Satanism, the figure of Aleister Crowley (1875-1947) looms like a mafia Godfather over a shadowy underworld. Crowley (rhymes with “holy”) is the single most influential character in the formation of modern Satanism and Witchcraft (Wicca). Born into a wealthy family who were the sole owners of a brewery and pub chain, Crowley resented the stern Christian upbringing and harsh Victorian morals inflicted upon him in his native Britain. (1)

Crowley enrolled at Cambridge University but never graduated, having instead chosen to embark upon a period of self-examination and the study of occult doctrine. It should be noted that Crowley was a world-class mountain climber and a minor celebrity as a young man. However, the majority of his time was spent on the study of ritual magic and mystical practices. Much of this esoteric exploration was Satanic in nature, despite claims to the contrary by Crowley’s contemporary followers.

In his quest for spiritual enlightenment, Crowley used drugs with meditative practices and sex rituals to form a system of sex-magick. (Crowley used the alternative spelling *magick* to distinguish his metaphysical teachings from stage magic.) Within this system, devotees claim that drugs, visualization, and the frenzy of sex cause them to merge with their chosen deity. In one ritual which Crowley undertook early in his career, he identified himself as Jesus Christ. In fact, the most popular photograph of Crowley shows him postured like Christ on the Cross. (2)

Crowley’s mock crucifixion mimics Lucifer’s rebellion, which is recounted in Isaiah Chapter 14. It constitutes a reenactment of the Fallen Angel’s attempt to invert Heaven and be worshiped as God. It is a ceremonial imitation of Lucifer’s mutiny

and represents a mini-victory for the Prince of this World in that God is eclipsed. Crowley himself was worshiped as God in this bizarre rite. At other times, Crowley identified himself as Satan (and other, mostly ancient Egyptian deities) and likewise encouraged his disciples to venerate him. Crowley chose the pharaonic gods for rituals merely because a statue of Horus at the Cairo Museum had the catalogue number of 666 and he saw this as a sign from Lucifer.

This notion of inversion is essential to understanding the phenomenon of Satanism. Ultimately, inversion involves the replacing of God with something else as an object of veneration. It really does not matter what replaces God so long as the Christian Deity is eclipsed in the hearts and minds of followers. Crowley was well aware of this notion of inversion, even going as far as to call his new religion "Crowleyanity" as an inversion of "Christianity." He symbolically inverted the Divine order by replacing Christ with himself and had his deranged followers venerate him as the Messiah. In his bid for spiritual power, Crowley directly petitioned the Fallen Angel by praying and killing small birds before a human skeleton mounted on a makeshift altar in his home. (3)

Crowley also claimed to have summoned Beelzebub and a host of 49 demons, and, on another occasion, he claimed to have conjured up 316 Devils in an arcane ceremony. Whatever one makes of these assertions, it certainly demonstrates Crowley's allegiance to the Prince of this World. (4)

Crowley later believed he was also the Anti-Christ. In his most famous work, *The Book of the Law*, written at a time when Crowley was openly referring to himself as The Great Beast 666, he wrote, "*With my hawk's head I peck at the eyes of Jesus.*" It is where he penned his credo "*Do what thy will shall be the whole of the law.*" The book called for a New Age of global conflict, constant bloodshed, and the eventual destruction of Christianity in an apocalyptic battle. (5)

Again, the inversion of the Christian faith was of utmost concern to Crowley. It did not matter if Crowley played the role of Jesus or Satan -- the primary goal was to obscure the real Christ by whatever means necessary.

In his obsession to overturn Christendom, Crowley was even willing to adopt atheism and communism. Just after World War I, Crowley wrote to the newly installed Communist government in Moscow and offered his services as propaganda minister for atheism with the express intent of deriding Christianity. The fact that the Russian Reds had no metaphysical beliefs was of little concern to Crowley. It was the Communist Central Committee's vow to destroy Christianity that really grabbed Crowley's attention. The Great Beast 666 was only concerned with the obliteration of the Christian Faith and would use anyone or any system at his disposal to promote this agenda. The Communists must have believed that The Great Beast 666 would better serve their revolution if he remained in the West. He never received a reply. (6)

Crowley's relationship with Fascism is somewhat complex. The Great Beast would adopt any system that sought to replace the Judeo-Christian tradition but was not one to subordinate himself in any meaningful way to any leader no matter how appealing his ideas. In this sense, Crowley was certainly not a Nazi or Nazi

sympathizer. However, Crowley did state that the prophecies depicted in *The Book of the Law* have cognates in a book of quotes entitled *Hitler Speaks*. Crowley identified his system with that of the Nazi party leader. (7)

Virtually all of Crowley's later disciples adopted strong elements of Fascism and Nazi occultism as part and parcel of fulfilling The Great Beast's agenda. One of Crowley's primary German followers was Matha Kunzel, who sincerely believed that Hitler was following Crowley's principles and became an avid member of the Nazi party. The British occult writer Gerald Suster speculated that the rise of totalitarian despots in the 20th century and the World Wars they started were, in reality, a bleak fulfillment of The Great Beast's forecasts concerning the epoch of violence which Crowley believed would eventually topple Christianity. As will be demonstrated, the trend of mixing Nazism and Crowleyanism would be continued by The Great Beast's devotees into the new millennium. (8)

Crowley's version of Satanism still crops up in modern Devil worship. One can find Satanists who worship themselves, Satanists who venerate the Devil as a real being and atheistic Satanists who use this diabolical faith as a convenient springboard to overturn Christianity. Oftentimes these competing convictions and interpretations of Satanism cause division within this movement but this is to be expected and in no way hinders their ultimate goal of destroying Christianity. From a theological perspective it must be kept in mind that Hell is full of Devil worshipers who bicker among themselves. So, it comes as no surprise that there is squabbling among contemporary Satanic groups in this world.

Crowley belonged to various mystical societies over the course of his career, including the Freemasons, Hermetic Order of the Golden Dawn, and the *Ordo Templi Orientis* (OTO) which he was later to lead and set up new lodges in Europe and America. The Great Beast started a commune in Sicily where he combined hard drugs, magical incantations, and ritual sex with his strange followers. Refusing to submit to any moral codes, Crowley allowed several pre-teen children to witness sex rituals involving explicit carnal acts - including sex with humans and goats. This is one fact his admirers never like to mention. (9)

There is also a vague reference to the human sacrifice of a male child in *Magick in Theory and Practice*, but modern Crowleyites claim this is merely a "metaphor" and that The Great Beast did not intend for his initiates to butcher babies in rituals. Crowley even had his teeth filed into sharp points and would draw blood and drink from his drug-addled acolytes. (10)

Trouble came to Crowley's commune when one of his followers died from toxic shock after ingesting cat's blood from a silver chalice during an arcane rite. The authorities were informed of the death and the Fascist government deported The Great Beast. The commune closed for good. Crowley turned much of his attention to spreading the OTO with its sodomy rituals, which The Great Beast greatly enjoyed. (11)

The modern founder of Witchcraft, Gerald Gardner, was an OTO initiate who hired Crowley to formulate the primary magical ceremonies practiced in some form by the vast majority of Wiccans to this day. Despite their claims that they are

practicing the continuation of pre-Christian Goddess religion, which survived from ancient times, most modern Witches are merely celebrating the nature rites of The Great Beast 666. Crowley certainly enjoyed the money he received to formulate these Wicca rituals, but he must also have seen the potential this “Mother Nature” religion had for further toppling Christianity. (12)

During the twilight of his life, Crowley worked to ensure his teachings would continue after his death. One of his schemes was to infiltrate the Catholic Church (an idea he may have gotten from the Hermetic Order of the Golden Dawn) and subvert it from within. For this end, he ordered his disciple Charles S. Jones to convert to the Church of Rome and begin to replace it with Crowleyanity. Jones was arrested once for indecent exposure in Canada. How well he did within the Catholic Church is unknown. (13)

The Great Beast’s final years were spent in destitution. He made ends meet by taking handouts from followers and writing a book on tarot, as well as selling a brand of aphrodisiacs called *Crowley’s Elixir of Life Pills* which included Crowley’s own sperm as the main ingredient. He died on December 1, 1947 with little fanfare or media attention. (14)

Crowley was debt ridden and burnt out from drugs when he died. The lives of his followers took an even worse turn, with many of his male and female sex-magick partners eventually going insane. Two of Crowley’s wives and five of his mistresses even committed suicide. One of his most loyal devotees, Norman Mudd, filled his pockets with rocks and walked straight into the Atlantic Ocean, drowning himself. (15)

His primary American follower was rocket designer Jack Parsons, who revolutionized missile propulsion by inventing solid rocket fuel. One of Parsons’ magical partners was L. Ron Hubbard, who went on to found Dianetics and the Church of Scientology. Parsons died in an explosion in the late 1940s, but not before securing a place for The Great Beast 666 in American culture. (16)

In the late 1940s, the Berkeley OTO branch was frequented by actor and director Kenneth Anger (b. 1930). Anger’s interest in occultism runs very deep, and his interest in Crowley is obsessive. In his effort to understand The Great Beast, Anger went on a 1950s pilgrimage to Crowley’s old commune in Sicily and made a film based on Crowleyian principles entitled *Inauguration of the Pleasure Dome* (1954). (17)

Many years later, Anger would become a household name for penning the pop culture masterpiece *Hollywood Babylon* (1981), the first book to expose the rampant homosexuality and deviancy in the film industry and a must read for anyone interested in American cultural history. No one can deny that Kenneth Anger is a talented filmmaker and writer, even though one may strongly disagree with his philosophy. Anger is still involved in Crowleyanity and is one of the major promoters of The Great Beast’s worldview. However, Anger has a very low opinion of those groups who claim to be the legitimate heirs of Crowley’s OTO. In a recent interview Anger lamented:

...I’m not too keen on any group or cult. I’ve been to meet the various groups who call themselves OTO which Crowley founded. But Crowley never ‘anointed’ them or approved of them. All the groups are fighting with each other. There’s been raids,

thefts, houses have been broken into, books have been stolen, one house was burned down.

These are Crowleyites fighting among each other and I'm ashamed of them (18)

Crowley is hugely popular today -- more so than during his lifetime. In 1967, he appeared on the cover of *The Beatles Sgt. Peppers Lonely Hearts Club Band*. In a 2002 BBC survey of the 100 Greatest Britons, Crowley ranked number 73. (19)

The Church of Satan

The Berkeley OTO had a San Franciscan member named Howard Stanton Levey (1930-1997) who started frequenting the lodge in 1951. Levey had been in correspondence with Jack Parsons in the late 1940s and was an eager student of the occult. His background is somewhat shrouded in mystery, primarily because he misrepresented his early life and work when he was later to emerge as a major figure in occult circles. It is clear, however, that Levey was a musician who played keyboard at various burlesque houses and nightclubs in the Bay Area in the 1950s. (20)

Levey and Anger became fast friends at the OTO and shared an interest in the more nefarious side of life. The two men intensely studied such phenomena as werewolves, vampires, tarot, ESP and essentially every other occult and mystical teaching under the sun. By 1961, they began to hold meetings at Levey's house, where they charged for public lectures on occultism which attracted fairly large crowds. Much of Levey's motivation for starting this "occult club" was the 1947 novel (and film) *Nightmare Alley* by William Lindsay Gresham about a carnival huckster who starts a phony spiritualist church to con money out of "rubes". (Ironically, Gresham's wife Joy went on to marry Christian author C. S. Lewis!) (21)

As the public decency laws began to change in California, burlesque houses were allowed to offer topless and eventually fully nude dancing. Levey was already ingrained in the adult entertainment industry as a keyboard player in the older burlesque club scene. As a means to earn money, Levey recruited dancers and organized strip shows in San Francisco. According to his daughter, Zeena, he often turned to pimping women in San Francisco's red light district, called the Tenderloin. (22)

In 1966, Levey formulated a scheme by which he could combine his favorite interests -- sex, money and magick. With Anger's blessing, Levey shaved his head, donned black clothing, and announced the formation of the Church of Satan. He also changed his name to Anton Szandor LaVey and declared himself to be The Black Pope and The Devil's Avenger. In order to have a secure base of operation, LaVey painted his house black and designed an elaborate ritual chamber which would act as the headquarters for the new diabolical church. LaVey went on a publicity blitz which afforded him celebrity status in the growing 1960s counter culture. Over the course of the next few years, LaVey gathered a fairly large following of about 2000 members worldwide with around 500 or 600 of these being serious hardcore devotees. (23)

In 1969, Avon books published *The Satanic Bible*, LaVey's attempt at giving shape to his diabolical purview. Later books included *The Satanic Witch* (1971), *The Satanic Rituals* (1972), *The Devil's Notebook* (1992) and *Satan Speaks* (1998). The Black Pope's Bible turned out to be mostly a plagiarized version of the book *Might Is Right* (1896), an anti-Catholic diatribe written by a disgruntled Irish Catholic immigrant who wrote under the pen name of Ragnar Redbeard. The primary ritual contained in *The Satanic Bible* is a reworking of the 17th century Black Mass -- a parody of Roman Catholic services.

Some of the other rituals LaVey promotes in these tomes have clear and distinct Nazi elements. One ceremony was accompanied by the Nazi hymn "Germany Awake", composed by the fanatic Fascist Dietrich Eckart which was broadcast daily in the Third Reich. One can find references to Nazism in LaVey's arcane rites, including purely Fascist terms like *Thule*, *Vril*, and *Abnenerbe* sprinkled throughout his diabolical services. LaVey was not shy about admitting his deep admiration for the SS, even claiming that one of his rituals was based on Himmler's most elite ceremonies, reserved for the highest members of his inner circle. (24)

LaVey's defenders often point out The Black Pope had Jewish blood and could not really have been a Nazi sympathizer. However, when one considers that the most vicious guards in Germany's concentration camps were in fact Jewish, it really renders this argument moot. This refers, of course, to the Capos -- Jews the Nazis recruited to harass and murder their own kind. Most of these Capos were volunteers. Even more disturbing is LaVey's appearance in Kenneth Anger's film *Invocation of my Demon Brother* (1969) where Crowleyite rituals are performed while Anger grasps a Nazi flag.

According to Michael Aquino in his book *The Church of Satan* (2002) an early patron of LaVey's diabolical services was Tom Creech who regularly attended Black Masses and invocation ceremonies conducted by The Black Pope in the first year of the Church of Satan's founding. Creech has sentenced to hang by the State of Idaho in 1976 for the grisly murder of two men. His statement to the police was quite remarkable as he confessed to belonging to a Satanic Cult which had ordered him to murder as a sacrifice to Lucifer. The authorities claim Creech's assertion is impossible to prove or disprove and have not followed up on his testimony. Creech is one of the lesser known serial killers directly associated with Anton LaVey but the other three became household names.

The formation of the Church of Satan would also afford The Black Pope many tax breaks as he quickly devised a scheme to combine his Devil Worship with the adult entertainment industry. LaVey had contacts within organized crime from an uncle who had been one of Al Capone's henchmen. (25)

This connection gave him access to the strip club owners in San Francisco, and he began to recruit young women to perform in these new clubs. As a means to avoid taxation, The Black Pope called one of his strip shows *The Witch's Review* and declared that the topless dance was a legitimate religious ceremony. This also buffered him from government censors. The Devil's Avenger could always claim they were infringing on his right to practice his religion if the authorities ever changed the decency laws. (26)

One young woman who LaVey recruited to perform topless in *The Witch's Review* was a sexy drifter named Susan Atkins. Atkins played the role of a seductive vampireress who emerged topless from a coffin and would point her index finger, which had a long red painted fingernail, at the leering audience. She would hiss and symbolically beckon for the blood of the trench coat-wearing customers who paid their admission to The Black Pope's religious ceremony. Her stage act strangely presaged her later criminal activities. (27)

Susan Atkins became a household name in 1969 after viciously murdering the pregnant actress Sharon Tate by stabbing her in the stomach. Susan then compulsively licked the blood of the popular star off of her own fingers. In a sense, she took her vampire role to heart. After breaking with LaVey, Atkins joined up with The Family -- Charles Manson's motley crew of Devil worshippers. Susan Atkins was present at all three sets of murders ordered by Charles Manson at the Hinman, Tate, and Labianca homes. (28)

Another Church of Satan member who defected to Manson was Robert "Bobby" Beausoleil, who brutally murdered Gary Hinman at the request of Charlie. (Like Crowley, Manson demanded to be worshiped as Jesus and Satan.) Both of these former Church of Satan members are doing life in prison. (29) Beausoleil tattooed himself with Nazi symbols and joined the Aryan Nations prison gang -- another link between mainstream Satanism and violent neo-Nazism. (30) (The fourth serial killer LaVey knew was Richard Ramirez who will be covered in a later chapter)

LaVey, like all pimps, had an excessive need to exploit people and decided that he would charge huge sums to Church of Satan members for his advanced teachings. In 1975, members were shocked to find an ultimatum in LaVey's newsletter *The Cloven Hoof*, stating that from then on; all higher degrees of initiation would only be available if large contributions in cash, real estate, or valuable works of art were donated to The Black Pope. In his greed, LaVey must have forgotten that he taught all of these people to be out for themselves and never to be anyone's sucker. Consequently, the majority of hardcore followers left and formed other Satanic organizations which became influential, some of which will be covered below. (31)

This mass defection dealt a serious blow to LaVey -- one from which neither he nor his organization ever fully recovered. With his core followers gone, LaVey lost his major source of income and, until his death, lived in abject poverty. The Black Pope survived primarily off of handouts from a few close friends and occasional wealthy individuals who joined his organization and could afford the large stash of cash he demanded for official diplomas from the Church of Satan. The Black Pope would make anyone a priest in his diabolic order if they paid him enough -- he would issue these degrees without even offering the payee any arcane instruction. Many wealthy businessmen in San Francisco and elsewhere would pay for these bogus certificates to use as a novelty joke item to show friends and shock business partners. (32) Even with these schemes, The Black Pope almost lost his house due to a defaulted mortgage, but a wealthy friend purchased it and allowed LaVey to live there for the rest of his life. (33)

LaVey's philosophy of selfishness soon impacted his personal life and his marriage and family suffered greatly. According to Zeena LaVey Schreck, The Black Pope's youngest daughter, her father regularly beat his second wife, Diane, and the police had to be called on one occasion to break up a particularly nasty domestic fight. In this instance, the High Priest of the Church of Satan attempted to strangle his spouse to death. Zeena also maintains that Anton was a bullying father who mistreated both her and her older step-sister Karla. She also maintains that LaVey neglected his collection of exotic animals and abused them with a cattle prod. In a most startling statement, Zeena asserts that her father passively watched a friend of many years molest her son Stanton in The Black Pope's presence. The perpetrator was later sent to prison for sexually abusing another child. (34)

According to *Bizarre Magazine*, Anton LaVey may have fathered a child of incest with his daughter Zeena in the person of Stanton LaVey. Zeena gave birth to Stanton when she was only 14-years-old and the true identity of his father has never been known to the general public or even to Stanton himself. Stanton denies that his grandfather was his father but even *Bizarre* noted his uncanny resemblance to Anton LaVey. His mother Zeena once attempted to murder Stanton. One night Zeena climbed out of her coffin/bed and went after him. *Bizarre* quoted Stanton, "Zeena grabbed her dagger and was coming at me in this zombie trance, telling me she's going to kill me once and for all as she always wanted to."

This deranged behavior on Zeena's part points to the possibility that her own father impregnated her. The mother and son have not spoken in over ten years. Stanton LaVey should take medical tests to determine whether he is, or is not, a product of incest.

As a means to secure cash in the 1980s and 90s, Anton LaVey returned to his practice of pimping. When young females joined the Church of Satan, LaVey would often initiate them into his coven by having them sell their bodies in San Francisco's Tenderloin sex district. LaVey pocketed the cash these naïf girls returned with after servicing men. (35)

LaVey's latter years were quite strange. He became more and more paranoid, believing people were out to kill him. He became reclusive and saw less and less of even his closet devotees. The Black Pope's house was surrounded by a large fence with barbed wire, and he spent the majority of his time inside playing his organ and interacting with a cadre of low-tech robots he had created or collected over the years. LaVey did not bother with anyone apart from those who would supply him with much needed cash. (36)

The rise of the Internet afforded LaVey with new hope for his movement and he sought contributions through the Church of Satan web page, which went online in 1995. His ex-wife and daughters had little to do with The Black Pope. His only companions were his lover Blanche Barton and their illegitimate son Satan LaVey.

The High Priest of the Church of Satan developed cardiac trouble in the 1990s and had no health insurance. This social Darwinist who asserted that the weak should die and only the strong should be allowed to survive went hat-in-hand to Saint

Mary's Roman Catholic Hospital in San Francisco where he applied for and received full free health care from the Church he dedicated his life to ridiculing. The Black Pope, who once recorded a song which contained a line about "throwing Christians to the lions because we don't need them anymore" (37) pathetically, took charity from the Church of Rome.

According to an unnamed source who worked at Saint Mary's when LaVey was a patient, The Devil's Avenger also took social services from the hospital, including supermarket food gift certificates and money to pay his utilities from the Sisters of Mercy, who run this Catholic institution. No Satanist or Satanic organization came forward to pay any of LaVey's medical expenses. Howard Stanton Levey (aka Anton Zsador LaVey) died at Saint Mary's Roman Catholic Hospital on October 29, 1997. At the time of his passing, he was both the most famous occultist in history and one of the biggest hypocrites ever to walk this planet.

Michael Aquino and the Temple of Set

The largest Satanic church to spin-off from the Church of Satan is undoubtedly the Temple of Set, formed by The Black Pope's number-one disciple, Dr. Michael Aquino. Aquino joined up in 1969 while he was a U.S. army officer and psychological operations expert at the Presidio Army base in San Francisco. A highly educated and sophisticated man with a Ph.D. from UC Santa Barbara, Aquino was the polar opposite of the high school drop-out and street hustler LaVey. The class difference was bound to cause tension between the two men. This came to a head in 1975 when, as mentioned earlier, LaVey tried to pull a con job on his devotees and drain them of whatever wealth they had in order to receive the higher initiation rites of The Black Pope's organization. The final rupture came when LaVey accepted money for the rites and proffered little or no instruction on the tenets of Satanism to the attention seeking dilettantes who handed cash to The Black Pope. (38)

Aquino took his diabolical beliefs seriously. He undertook a long and detailed study of occultism and the rites of the Church of Satan. This academic Devil worshiper just could not stomach the fact that LaVey gave away the very advanced degrees he worked hard to attain. He stated the church was attracting too many "fad followers, egomaniacs and assorted oddballs whose interest in becoming Satanists was to flash their membership cards for cocktail party notoriety." (39)

Nor did Aquino appreciate LaVey's notion of atheism and self-assertion. For Aquino, Satan was a real metaphysical being whose devotees were meant to worship and serve as their diabolical deity. This constitutes the first break between atheistic Satanists and theistic Satanists -- a rift which has little meaning when considering that either way is consistent with Crowley's notion of inversion. It does not matter if a Satanist replaces God with himself or the Devil -- the ultimate end result serves the same agenda of overturning Christianity and replacing it with Devil worship. Whether the individual Satanist prefers atheistic or theistic Satanism is irrelevant. Some spin-off groups of theistic Satanists believe this rift will be settled with the emergence of the Anti-Christ in global affairs. (40)

Aquino not only claims to have Faith in the Fallen Angel but believes the Prince of Darkness spoke to him and gave him a further revelation from Hell. This communication from the Devil was eventually written down in Aquino's treatise *The Book of Coming Forth by Night* (1985). In this text, the archfiend identified himself as Set -- the ancient Egyptian name for Satan -- and instructed Aquino to form a new organization called the Temple of Set (with members referred to as Setians) which was to act as a vehicle for the emergence of a new and bold Satanic Age. (41)

The trend of self-promotion and eclipsing the Christian God still survived the break from the Church of Satan as evinced in the statement of leading Setian Don Webb, "*The mission of the Temple of Set is to recreate a tradition of self-deification.*" (42) For all of Aquino's squabbling over the years, he retained the key element of both LaVey and Crowley's ultimate concern -- to replace the Christian God with something else. In Aquino's theology, it is valid to replace the Christian God with oneself and/or Satan (Set). From a Christian perspective, adopting either of these nefarious concepts eclipses God.

Aquino's Temple of Set became fairly popular and even converted Zeena LaVey and her husband, Nicholas Schreck, for a time. Although they espouse Setian views, the Schrecks have also adopted Crowleyanity, having experimented with and written about various forms of sex magick. The Schrecks founded their own order called *The Storm*, which seeks to include ancient Indo-European sex themes into their greater purview. Like many Satanists, they have incorporated neo-Nazi occultism and racism as part and parcel of their diabolical practices. The Schrecks recorded a CD under the group name of *Radio Werewolf* - a name borrowed from Himmler's underground broadcasting network which sent out pro-Nazi messages after the Third Reich surrendered. The Schrecks moved to Germany and are directly associated with neo-Fascist Skin Head groups. They also produced a movie entitled *Charles Manson Superstar* (1989), a documentary which afforded Manson a chance to rant away concerning his murderous intentions from inside the maximum-security prison from which he shall never emerge. The Schrecks also produced a series of quite interesting books, one of which is on the history of Satanism in the cinema.

Many Temple of Set members are Jewish yet Aquino still hails Himmler as a great Satanic initiate. He even performed a series of rituals at the old SS headquarters at Wewelsburg Castle in Germany, where Himmler's occult priests once tried to resurrect several severed heads and make them speak. Aquino believed Wewelsburg Castle was a major earthly nexus of nefarious powers and sought to tap into this diabolical goldmine. It was at this High Temple of Nazism that Aquino claimed to achieve an even higher initiation and further merged with his malevolent god Set. He set down his experiences with Nazi mysticism in *The Wewelsburg Working* (1982). (How any Jew could join the Temple of Set is beyond reason.)

Although Aquino is a master at media manipulation and various forms of mind control from his years as a U.S. Army PSI-OP officer, he still could not avoid a series of law suites which seriously damaged his reputation. The *New Religious*

Movements page, an academic site which chronicles novel spiritual practices, best sums up the troubles Aquino faced. It should be noted that he was never charged with any crime:

A scandal that broke out in 1986 did much to hurt the credibility of Michael Aquino and the Temple of Set. Charges of child molestation surfaced at the day-care center at Presidio Army Base, where Lt. Col. Aquino was assigned. Gary Hambricht, a day-care worker, was charged with 12 counts of sodomy, oral copulation, and lewd conduct. Aquino, along with his wife Lilith, were identified by some of the children as possibly being another man who had participated in the molestations. However, no formal charges were ever brought against Aquino, and the case against Hambricht was later dismissed.

*In 1994, Aquino sued Linda Blood, a former member of the Temple of Set, for libel in her book *The New Satanist*. The book, Aquino's lawyers said, depicted him and his fellow Setians as "pedophiles, child abusers, murderers and the masterminds behind a nationwide satanic conspiracy". This was settled out of court, with details of the settlement kept confidential.*

The latest lawsuit, in 1997, was brought against an internet provider for failing to block defamatory posts from an anonymous user. A person using the name "Curio" had posted over 500 messages that accused Aquino of "having participated in heinous crimes, sexual perversions and acts of moral turpitude," according to Aquino's lawyers. That case against the internet company ElectriCiti was thrown out of court. (43)

From 1980 to 1986 worked as an adjunct professor of political science at Golden Gate University. The various scandals took their toll and Aquino retired from public life and turned over the operations of the Temple of Set to Don Webb and he lives in semi-retirement.

The Process Church of the Final Judgment

Although it is now defunct, no discussion of modern Satanism would be complete without reviewing the strange saga of the Process Church of the Final Judgment. The lineage of this Church can be directly traced to Aleister Crowley via Jack Parsons and L. Ron Hubbard. The Process Church was started by two former Church of Scientology members named Robert and Mary Anne Moore DeGrimston in England in 1965. They soon began recruiting rich young people into their cult. The Process Church of the Final Judgment had a Satanic theology in which Jesus and Satan were different aspects of the same Divine Being. In their apocalyptic purview, the DeGrimstons believed the world would erupt into global war which would be ended by a return of Jesus and Satan. Jesus would judge the Living and the Dead and his other aspect Satan would inflict punishment on the unjust. Members were encouraged to worship both Jesus and Lucifer in their clearly diabolic belief system. The Process Church also began to adopt Nazi-style symbols and language in their diabolic theology of death and destruction. The primary symbol of DeGrimston's organization looks very much like Hitler's swastika. (44)

As the cult spread to the New World, they encountered Charles Manson and The Family in San Francisco. Manson was also a former Scientologist who claimed that he and Robert Moore DeGrimston were “one and the same” at his trial in 1970. Manson claimed to be Jesus and Satan at the same time and wrote an article for the Process Church magazine. Author Ed Saunders was sued by the Process Church for suggesting that members were somehow involved in Manson’s Helter Skelter program of murder and mayhem. Saunders conceded and removed the offensive passage from his book *The Family* (1971). (45)

Researcher Maury Terry was likewise sued by the OTO for claiming links between them, the Process Church, The Family and Son of Sam serial killer David Berkowitz in his book *The Ultimate Evil*. No OTO or Process Church member was charged with any crime while being active members of these groups. Bobby Beausoleil was no longer involved with Ken Anger or LaVey when he butchered Gary Hinman. Likewise, no Process Church member was ever charged with murder in relation to the Son of Sam shootings. However, Berkowitz claims to this day he was part of a Process Church offshoot, but no one takes his claims seriously as he originally said his neighbor’s dog Sam ordered him to kill those people. Terry settled out of court but still promotes his book, which makes the same assertions. (46)

Eventually, Robert Moore DeGrimston suffered from sexual problems with his wife and requested she allow him to bring another woman to their bed for a threesome. Mary Anne refused and this led to the entire collapse of the Process Church. It formally disbanded in 1975 and destroyed all of its records. (47)

Satanic Groups Today

After Anton LaVey’s death in 1997, his common-law wife Blanche Barton and his two daughters fought for his personal belongings and rights to continue operating the Church of Satan. His estate was settled and his property divided among the three. (48) Barton retained the official Church of Satan logos and a follower named Peter Gilmore was made the new “High Priest.” (49) Zeena joined the Temple of Set and eventually formed her own group. Karla went on to form a rival organization. Some of LaVey’s ordained priests went on to spread his doctrines in a less-organized way and only address those Satanists who knew LaVey personally. It must be kept in mind that there exists a plethora of Devil worshipping organizations and individuals.

Boyd Rice - who once sat on the council of the Church of Satan - continues to spread Satanism via his web site, although he combines it with other forms of occultism. As will be demonstrated, Rice has promoted some very disturbing messages via the Internet. (50)

Michael Moynihan, another Church of Satan priest, went on to join the Asatru Alliance and currently promotes the work of Italian Fascist Ideologue Julius Evola

who worked for Mussolini and eventually was employed by Himmler's SS research division.

Shane Bugbee, a Church of Satan priest who was one of the last people to interview LaVey, maintains a Satanic website and has a weekly program on *Radio Free Satan* - a web-based radio network he purchased and which commenced broadcasting on the Internet in 2000 and spreads the teachings of Satanism to the cyber-generation.

There is no way to determine how many Satanist organizations exist or how many practitioners of this movement are active. As mentioned earlier there are theistic, atheistic and individualistic Satanist groups and individuals. Many have a web presence and there are a good many solitary practitioners. Satanic groups are inclined to be small and splintering tends to occur.

The Rise in Satanic Crime

A philosophy of life that centers on selfishness and disregard for all forms of authority will inevitably lead to criminal activity. LaVey had ties to organized crime and claimed Las Vegas gangsters were his role models. He pimped women in San Francisco's red light district throughout his whole adult life. It is no wonder that his disciples like Susan Atkins went on to perform heinous murders. The Black Pope's Satanic teaching has influenced a variety of criminals who also claimed to be Satanists. This is not to say that the Church of Satan or any of its offshoots are responsible for the criminal actions of others, but their publications and related media certainly encourage illicit activities.

There are also other Satanic groups which espouse violence and criminal activities behind the veil of free speech. Several groups seek to unify Satanists in a final battle against Christians. Radio Free Satan has broadcast shows which encourages teenagers to commit suicide.

LaVey's former followers have also faced legal problems. Boyd Rice was questioned by the United States Secret Service because of his relationship with Charles Manson. Rice actually visited Manson on many occasions but was banned from doing so when he was caught attempting to smuggle a bullet into the prison where Manson was being held. Charlie had access to an arts and crafts shop where he could easily have fashioned a zip gun and used Rice's bullet to either attempt an escape or kill a guard or fellow inmate.

In a documentary called *Speak of the Devil* (1993) -- a biography of Anton LaVey - Boyd Rice, a high-ranking priest in the Church of Satan and mentor of shock rocker Marilyn Manson, can be seen in a bowling alley dressed all in black like the Columbine shooters. He speaks of how most Satanists meet in bowling alleys "*working on their scores.*" This segment is quite eerie when one considers that Harris and Klebold bowled for almost two hours before they began their murderous rampage.

In a 2002 remake of the CD *Music Martinis and Misanthropy* by Boyd Rice and Friends a bonus song is included where Rice addresses the Columbine shootings and has the line:

“Boyd Rice is the one who did it -- now I've heard the secret news.”

Rice has expressed support for President George W. Bush and, despite his confession of complicity in the Columbine shootings, was invited to speak at M.I.T.

Shane Bugbee was investigated by the Secret Service when a guest on his radio show threatened the life of the President. Even after the Secret Service visited his home, Bugbee still commented on the 2004 election by stating that *“If you're not voting with lead, it's not worth a fucking vote.”* (51)

With these sorts of exemplars it is no wonder that Satanic crime is on the rise. The constitutionally protected *Religious Satanists* like Rice and Bugbee are encouraging and celebrating violent acts to the *Self-styled Satanists* who most often do not belong to any formal organization and tend to form small cults, many of whom engage in illegal activities and use the literature and teachings of LaVey and his acolytes as ideological justification for crime.

The case studies which appear in the following pages trace cases wherein self-proclaimed Satanists committed acts of murder as part and parcel of their religious practice. Chapter Two deals with Charles Manson and his unhinged band of Devil-worshipping maniacs. Chapter Three covers the case of “Son of Sam” serial killer David Berkowitz. Chapter Four reviews the “Night Stalker” Richard Ramirez and his fiendish murders. Chapter Five looks at the case of Ricky Kasso, who ritually killed his friend in 1985. Chapter Six relates the career of Norway’s “Wolfman” Varg Vikernes, who was sent to prison in 1993. Chapter Seven covers the sick crimes of Satanic killer Joe Fiorella and his coven who performed an act of ritual necrophilia. Chapter Eight assesses the crimes of Columbine shooters Harris and Klebold and their relationship to Satanism. Chapter Nine addresses the case of Satanist Jeff Weise, who shot up his high school in 2005. Chapter Ten deals with the case of Rodrigo Orias, who decapitated a Catholic priest as a tribute to Lucifer in 2004. Chapter Eleven tells the true story of Andrea Volpe, who butchered a girl in a Satanic ritual wherein she was considered an embodiment of the Virgin Mary. Chapter Twelve delves into the case of Mark Dutroux -- Belgium’s Satanic child pornographer. Chapter Thirteen reviews groups like the Skull and Bones Society and its off-shoots--and seeks to determine if there exists any links between these exclusive groups and the more grass roots variety of Satanic criminals.

Be prepared for the shock of your life!

End Notes

- 1-2) Drury, Neville, *The History of Magic in the Modern Age*, Carrol & Graf, (2000) p. 89.
- 3) Wilson, Colin, *Rogue Messiahs*, Hampton Roads (2000) p. 206.
- 4) Gardner, Martin, *On the Wild Side*, Prometheus Books (1992) p. 198.
- 5) Goodrick-Clarke, Nicholas, *Black Sun*, NYU Press (2002) p. 216.
- 6) Wilson Colin, *Aleister Crowley: The Nature of the Beast*, Aquarian Press (1989) p. 137.
- 8) Goodrick-Clarke: p. 213.
- 9) Wilson: 1987 p. 132.
- 10) Gardner: p. 198.
- 11) Koenig, P. R., *XI^o Anal Intercourse and the OTO*, online article: <http://homepage.sunrise.ch/homepage/prkoenig/xi.htm>
- 12) Drury: p. 108.
- 13-16) Wilson: 1987 pp. 140 – 152.
- 17) Goodrick-Clarke: p. 214.
- 18) T.O.P.Y, *An interview with Kenneth Anger*, 1/22/05 online article: <http://www.topy.net/anger.html>
- 19) BBC, *BBC reveals 100 great British heroes*, 8/22/02
- 21) Goodrick-Clarke: p. 214.
- 22) Schreck, Nicholas and Zeena, *Anton LaVey: Legend and Reality*, 2/2/98 online article: <http://fcos.us//aslv.html>
- 23-24) Goodrick-Clarke: pp. 214-215.
- 25) Schreck 2/2/98: <http://fcos.us//aslv.html>
- 26-28) Schreck, Nicholas, *Charles Manson Superstar*, DVD Screen Edge (2002).
- 29) CharlieManson.com, *Whose Who*, online article: <http://www.charliemanson.com/whoswho.htm>
- 30) Moore, John, *Prison has a lock on Manson, most of family*, Denver Post 2/9/03.
- 31) Goodrick-Clarke: P. 215.
- 32) Drury: pp. 195-196.
- 33) Garcia, Ken, *End Near for Ex Devil Church*, San Francisco Chronicle 3/22/01.
- 34-35) Schreck, Nicholas and Zeena, *Anton LaVey: Legend and Reality*, 2/2/98 online article: <http://fcos.us//aslv.html>
- 36) Bougas, Nick, *Speak of the Devil*, Feral House (1993) Video & San Francisco Chronicle 3/22/01.
- 37) Boyd Rice Web Page: <http://www.boydrice.com>

16 *Satanic Crime*

38-39) Drury: p. 195.

40) Corbin Michael, *A Closer Look*, airdate 9/17/04.

41) Goodrick-Clarke: pp. 214-215.

42) Drury: p. 209.

43) New Religious Movements, *Temple of Set*::
<http://religiousmovements.lib.virginia.edu/nrms/Satanism/tempset.html>

44-47) Lachman Gary, *Sympathy for the Devil*, Fortean Times:
http://www.forteanimes.com/articles/134_process.shtml

48) San Francisco Chronicle 3/22/01.

49) Church of Satan web page: <http://www.churchofsatan.com/home.html>

50) Boyd Rice web page: www.boydrice.com

51) *Radio Free Satan* airdate: 11/26/04.

2

Manson Family Values

On March 21, 1967 the State of California Parole Board held a hearing to determine if a habitual offender in their custody should be set free. Oddly, the prisoner begged to remain in prison, claiming that it was the only home he knew and he could not guarantee that he would not re-offend if released. For unclear reasons, the members of the board decided to free this convict -- a decision these men would live to regret. When the processing for release was completed, the newly liberated ex-convict headed for San Francisco where the Summer of Love was just getting underway. The man's name was Charles Willis Manson. Two years after his release, he would become one of the most famous men on Earth, having ordered several high-profile murders by his band of deranged followers who he quickly acquired after leaving the penitentiary. (1)

Lost Boy

Manson was born in Cincinnati, Ohio, on November 12, 1934 to Kathleen Maddox, an unmarried sixteen-year-old alcoholic who had constant run-ins with the law. The newborn's father was Colonel Scott of Ashland, Kentucky, who immediately abandoned his son. Kathleen married William Manson, who gave his surname to the boy, but the couple soon divorced. (2)

Manson never met his biological father, and the only male role model he ever had as a child was his uncle Jess who was a bootlegger and tax evader. Kathleen was a horrible mother with a habit of running off for extended periods, leaving young Charlie with relatives. When Kathleen and her brother concocted an ill-fated scheme at armed robbery and were incarcerated, Charlie was again sent to live with relatives in West Virginia. Upon his mother's release from jail, she returned to a life of boozing and neglecting her son. (3)

At nine years old Manson was caught stealing and sent to a reform school. After his release, he began to commit ever more daring crimes and was sent to a succession of youth-offender prisons through his teen years, including a short stint at Boy's Town. He was released from custody in 1954 at the age of nineteen. (4)

The next year, Manson married and fathered a son but began to steal cars to supplement his income. He moved to California with his pregnant wife but was soon sent to prison for auto theft. Charlie's wife, Rosalie, divorced him while he was incarcerated and disappeared with her son. Charlie never saw them again. Manson was released in 1958, began pimping women and was arrested for federal check fraud. The following year, Manson again found himself behind bars -- this

time Charlie was sentenced to a ten-year stint which he served in various federal houses of correction. (5)

During his time in prison, Manson took up two interests which were to affect his career after his release. He began to learn to play the guitar and was instructed by gangster Alvin “Creepy” Karpis (a member of Ma Parker’s gang). Manson demonstrated a genuine talent with the instrument and was a fairly accomplished composer of folk songs and blues tunes. His other interest centered on various self-help programs which were offered to inmates as a means to afford them social skills so that they could better function in society upon their release. Charlie took classes in Dale Carnegie’s *How to Win Friends and Influence People* which, in actuality, teaches people how to manipulate others to their will via subtle flattery. Manson also took classes in L. Ron Hubbard’s Scientology, which taught strategies for persuading other people to take your side in social situations. (6)

For a prisoner seeking genuine reform, such skills would be extremely helpful in attaining employment and adjusting to life on the outside. However, for a manipulating criminal like Manson, such skills gave him the ability to expand his con-man talents. Manson was given new social proficiency, allowing him to con people who were better educated and who came from higher social classes.

In 1967, the parole board sent the clearly deranged Manson out into the world (against his will) with new and sophisticated techniques for conning people.

How to Win Friends and Get Them to Kill People

Charlie was able to blend into the bohemian scene of the Haight-Ashbury subculture. His destitution actually appealed to the flower children, who were questioning the middle-class values of their parents. As the Summer of Love faded and the many young people who crowded the Haight returned home, the only remaining hippies were mostly hardcore drug addicts. This led 1960s countercultural icon Alan Watts to observe that the Height-Ashbury area quickly degenerated into a “freak show”. Charlie Manson was one of “freakiest” characters to thrive in the Height and gain a following.

Charlie’s jailhouse education combined with his musical talent made him quite popular on the streets. He started to draw a group of followers who were primarily well educated, young women with middle-class upbringings. These attractive females suffered from deep-rooted psychological problems and took rebellious stances against their parents and the consumerist economy. They all used illicit drugs as part of their counter-culture lifestyle. Charlie moved in and started to manipulate these troubled young people. He worked to destroy their sexual and social inhibitions and made them reassess normal standards of conduct. For the most part, Charlie’s male followers were likewise gullible and looking for the security of a domineering leader. Charlie also encouraged illegal drugs as a further means to break down psychological barriers and assert control over the hearts and minds of his newly found adherents. (7)

The Family, a name Charlie gave his followers, moved to Polk Street in the Height and lived just a few doors down from the Process Church of the Final Judgment (see Chapter One). The Process Church and The Family had much in common theologically. So much so that Charlie wrote an article for the Process magazine, which was sold on the streets. Manson also seems to have adopted a form of Process belief because, like them, Charlie believed that Christ and Satan were different aspects of the same divine being. However, Manson may have deviated from their spiritual system in that he thought he himself was an incarnation of this God/Devil deity. Two Process members visited Manson in jail when he was later arrested for murder. (8)

Manson and his brainwashed groupies left San Francisco in the Spring of 1968 after purchasing an old school bus. They traveled the West Coast, eventually gravitating south to L.A. At this juncture, Charlie Manson was their undisputed leader. They befriended Gary Hinman, a professional musician who admired Charlie's guitar style and who let these wanderers use his place as a crash pad. This turned out to be a fatal mistake. Hinman was so impressed with Charlie's music that he contacted his friend Brian Wilson of the Beach Boys to meet and listen to his new discovery. Manson ordered his girls to please Wilson in every conceivable way. The Beach Boys eventually recorded Charlie's song "Never Learn Not to Love" which appeared on their *20/20* LP. Manson began holding weird religious rituals in Wilson's home. The Family eventually moved into Wilson's house for what seemed to be permanently. However, the youngest Beach Boy became leery of Manson when Charlie's con man skills failed to work on the streetwise musician. Charlie pulled a knife on Wilson in frustration and the famous drummer fled the house. Wilson had his business people evict The Family from his home by selling it and he broke off all ties with Charlie. (9)

In his quest for more followers, Manson always sent some disciples on the road to recruit and scope out places where they could stay in between their travels. Members of The Family discovered George Spahn, an elderly ranch owner who rented his property to the big movie studios to film cowboy epics in the 1940s. There was a small Western town constructed on Spahn Ranch by movie moguls who abandoned the set in the early 1960s after the decline of cowboy movies. Manson charmed the old man into letting The Family live there and sweetened the deal by having fanatic follower Lynette "Squeaky" Fromme sexually please the ornery octogenarian. (10)

Charlie pressed hard to promote his musical career and contacted the record producer Terry Melcher who refused to sign Manson on his record label after several auditions -- a fact which upset Charlie because he somehow assumed they had a recording deal after their initial meeting. This would cause great bloodshed and misery. (11)

The Neo-Nazi/Satanist Agenda of The Family

Charles Manson is best known for carving a small swastika on his forehead, which appeared in photos of him in the popular press after his permanent incarceration.

Several of his female followers likewise carved an “X” symbol and later swastikas between their brows and even shaved their heads, presaging the skinhead neo-Nazis who would emerge in the late 1970s. This comes as no surprise as The Family adopted many neo-Nazi teachings into their eclectic hodge-podge of doctrine. Charlie is often quoted as saying, “Hitler was an in-tune guy who tried to level the karma of the Jews.” And, “They’ll pray for Hitler to come back, they’ll wish he had been here.” As well as, “Hitler tied to put order in the world.”

Charlie was also inspired by General Irwin Rommel and moved between Spahn Ranch and another spot called Barker Ranch as if he were the Desert Fox patrolling in North Africa. Under Charlie’s orders, his devotees redesigned stolen cars into dune buggies, some of which he would sell and others he would convert into desert assault vehicles mounted with firearms as if he were preparing for a major battle. All Family members practiced with rifles, shotguns, and pistols and studied deadly knife techniques. In a very short time, the group was a highly trained band of killers proficient in a variety of weapons and knowledgeable of the basic tactics of organized warfare. They would also take turns in lookout bunkers they constructed and peer out over an empty desert watching to see if any enemies were charging them from the wasteland of Death Valley. (12)

Manson also practiced a weird mix of Satanism which is evinced by the fact that he recruited motorcycle gangs with devilish names and forged alliances with them. This is not to say that Charlie controlled these organizations but he sought their cooperation in a variety of legal and illegal operations and looked forward to future collaboration with them. The following biker gangs were regulars at both ranches; *The Hells Angels*, *Straight Satans*, *Satan’s Slaves*, and the *Jokers From Hell*. Squeaky Fromme designed and produced some biker jackets for the female members of The Family, which had the words “*Devil’s Witches*” sewed on the back of them in large lettering. Manson is quoted later as saying, “*Satan means what I want it to mean. It’s on my forehead.*” (A reference to the swastika carved into his skin.) This really brings the neo-Nazi/Satanist agenda of The Family home. (13)

Manson Worshiped as the “Son of Man”

Much like Aleister Crowley, Manson demanded to be worshiped as both Jesus Christ and Satan. As mentioned in Chapter One, this is really a form of satanic inversion wherein the real Judeo-Christian God is replaced or eclipsed. Charlie often had his followers worship him as both Jesus and Lucifer. In his demented paradigm, Charlie always made much of his last name claiming that Manson meant Son of Man, one of the titles of Christ in the New Testament. In a 1989 interview, Manson said, “Satan is God to me” (14). In the weird world of Satanism, such contradictions mean very little. Charlie’s drug-addled sycophants were more than willing to praise Manson as God himself, and it is nothing less than shocking the extent to which they would carry out bizarre ceremonies to confirm Charlie’s divinity.

Charlie held crucifixion rites on a cross that was mounted on a skull-shaped rock formation near Spahn Ranch. In these strange ceremonies, Charlie would mount

the cross and be venerated by his LSD-fueled devotees. These rituals would conclude with a massive bisexual orgy. This site was once used by another cult named The Fountain of the World. This weird sect flourished in the 1950s and was founded by a religious con man named Krishna Venta (Francis Pencovic) who, like Charlie, thought he was Jesus Christ and demanded to be worshiped as God in sex rituals. He also asserted that he was 244,000 years old and insisted he was immortal. Krishna Venta contended he was Christ Everlasting and seduced many of his female followers. In 1958, he died in a massive dynamite explosion ignited by the husbands of the women he was using in sex rituals. Whereas Pencovic only wanted to dominate a few followers for sexual purposes, Manson had much higher ambitions. (15)

Where did Charles Manson get this notion of being Jesus Christ and demanding to be worshiped in sex ceremonies? As hard as it is to believe, it may have occurred at his brief stay at Father Flanagan's Boy's Town where Manson was sent as a teenager. According to John DeCamp in *The Franklin Cover-up* (1994), there was an ongoing Satanic pedophile ring at Boy's Town which eventually was exposed and brought the downfall of Republican party stalwart Laurence King in a major scandal. This cabal of rapists was most likely in operation back when Manson was sent there. According to DeCamp, boys were regularly picked by Catholic priests to be raped and used by other clerics and politicians in ritualistic sex ceremonies and orgies. (16)

Since the Catholic priest pedophile scandal broke in 2002, there is even more proof of a sex magick cult in the Catholic Church where various priests have been worshiped as Jesus Christ in secret sex rites. According to the *Boston Globe*, Father Robert Meffan and Father James Foley both claimed to be Jesus Christ and initiated young gullible women into a covert sex cult. Each priest had young women worship him as Jesus Christ much in the same manner as Manson. The testimonies of Charles Manson and Father Robert Meffan sound similar, and their evasive attitude is almost identical.

...I may have implied on several different occasions to several different people that I may have been Jesus Christ, but haven't decided yet what I am or who I am. Some called him Christ... [Manson Trial 1970]

...What I was trying to show them (victims) is that Christ is human and you should love him as a human being...Don't think he's up there and he's spiritual and he's not human and physical. He's human, he's physical. That's what I was trying to point out to them. I felt that by having this little bit of intimacy with them that this is what it would be like with Christ. [Robert Meffan Boston Globe 12/4/02]

Could Manson have been initiated into a similar Catholic cult at Boy's Town? Some more evidence actually points to this. According to Ed Sanders in *The Family*, Manson actually visited and confronted a Catholic priest a few days before the Tate/Labianca killings and made a bizarre and stunning claim:

One Father of the Order of St. Augustine claimed that Charles Manson, or Manson's simulacrum, a short hirsute hippie with a new beard, on Sunday, July 27, 1969,

approached the back door of his parish house located about a half-mile from the LaBianca residence. "I'm Jesus Christ," announced the short fierce individual, according to Father Ryan. The Jesus-claimer looked at the father with a cold hard stare beneath heavy eyebrows. He asked the father why he was a priest and evinced an intense dislike toward the priesthood. The father shut the door in Manson's face.
[page 185]

This fact makes sense in light of the new evidence and it is clear that such "Jesus-claimer" cults existed in the Roman Catholic Church, and there was definitely a pedophile cult at Boy's Town. Of course, there will be those who take issue with this, and that is to be expected, but consider that Manson was accused of sexual assault at virtually every institution he was sent to after he left Boy's Town and started identifying himself as Jesus Christ after getting out of prison. This certainly lends weight to this theory. Hopefully, this new slant on Manson's motivations will provoke some debate on this neglected area of Charlie's troubled early life.

Helter Skelter Rex Mundi

This leads us to Charles Manson's master strategy for world domination. How he could get anyone to follow him is hard to comprehend when considering his absurd plans. The Family's theology centered on apocalyptic notions of impending societal destruction. Manson incorporated racist teachings into his cult paradigm. He preached that African Americans were going to rebel and start randomly killing whites, which would eventually erupt into urban chaos. This anarchy would propel the world into a full scale race war which African Americans would quickly win. According to Charlie, the black man would be too stupid to reorganize civilization and need the guidance of any surviving whites, which, of course, would be The Family. Manson dubbed this impending doomsday scenario *Helter Skelter*, after a song released by The Beatles. Charlie believed this musical group was a collection of angelic figures sending him divine messages via their music.

Helter Skelter would begin when black men began to brazenly enter white people's homes and brutally murder and rob them. It was these African American assaults on unprotected whites that would cause the establishment to declare war on the blacks. Charlie would later try to jump start this race war, with very drastic and tragic consequences. (17)

The Family would survive this global fracas by retreating into the desert and hiding in the Bottomless Pit spoken of in the Book of Revelation. Charlie thought that the entrance to this subterranean safe zone could be found in a cave in Death Valley which he called The Devil's Hole. (18)

As hard as it is to believe, Charlie hoodwinked The Family into believing that this mysterious cavern led down to a utopian City of Gold. It was in this underground paradise that The Family would live in bliss while the world raged in warfare. Charlie claimed The Family would eventually number the 144,000 elect spoken of in Scripture and would be comprised mostly of biker gangs. After the African Americans won, they would soon mismanage everything, and they would seek

guidance. At this juncture Charlie and his followers would emerge from the depths of the Earth and the blacks, accepting their innate inadequacy, would turn the world over to Charles Manson (a.k.a. Jesus Christ) -- who would rule as King of the World (*Rex Mundi*). Manson most likely borrowed this notion from various occult groups who speak of an underground sovereign who would emerge from the center of the Earth and promote a global utopia. The remaining African Americans would act as Charlie's slaves. (19)

Kick Starting Helter Skelter

A dispute over money would cause Charlie to begin a campaign of murder, which he believed would help kick start Helter Skelter. Gary Hinman owed Family member Bobby Beausoleil money for bad drugs he had purchased from the friendly musician. Several Family members led by Beausoleil went over to Hinman's house to collect the money. After mild scuffling, Manson was called, came over, slashed the side of Hinman's head with a sword and departed. Beausoleil and the others tried to get Hinman to pay up, but after several hours it proved futile. At this juncture, Beausoleil stabbed Hinman twice in the chest, killing the musician, and The Family members fled the scene -- but not before using Hinman's blood to paint a large cat's paw on the wall, hoping the police would believe the Black Panthers had killed the music teacher. The group met up with Charlie back at Spahn Ranch. Hinman's body was discovered on July 31, 1969 and a formal police investigation began. (20)

Charlie had hoped Helter Skelter would start sometime in mid 1969, but nothing in the news showed this as happening so he decided to do even more to spark the race war he was counting on. He sent his crew of now-seasoned killers out to butcher rich people in the more pricey sections of Los Angeles. Manson planned to make these killings look as if African Americans had committed them. This, he assumed, would cause great tension between blacks and the white establishment eventually leading to wide-scale and extremely violent racial warfare. (21)

For this purpose, he enlisted Family members Charles "Tex" Watson, Susan Atkins, Patricia Krenwinkel, Leslie Van Houten, and Linda Kasabian to perform some high profile murders and try and frame members of the African American community. They chose Terry Melcher's house, not seeming to care who they found there and who they killed. Charlie told them to do something "witchy", along with murdering anyone they came across. (22)

When Tex Watson burst into Melcher's old address at Ceili Drive on the night of August 9, 1969, it was the home of Sharon Tate, who had some houseguests over. Watson blurted out, "I'm the Devil and I'm here to do the Devil's business." Tate's houseguests would soon all be dead. All the victims died of gunshots and multiple stab wounds -- the fatal blows coming mainly from Tex's knife. Abigail Folger was stabbed 21 times. Voityck Frykowski was shot once and stabbed 51 times. Jay Sebrig was shot twice and stabbed six times. Steven Parent was shot three times. Sharon Tate was stabbed sixteen times by Susan Atkins who licked the blood off of her hands. The Family quickly fled the scene. (23)

On the next night, Charlie went with the group and entered the home of grocery chain owners Leno and Rosemary LaBianca and tied up the couple while his cohorts waited outside.

Charlie sent Tex and the gang back inside to murder the middle-aged couple and Manson left just before they entered the house which once belonged to Walt Disney. One of them smeared a misspelling of Helter Skelter on the wall with the blood of the victims. This was the final set of murders apart from Family associates who were killed because they knew too much. (24)

The meeting of Tate and Aktins at the second murder scene has some very ominous overtones. Aktins was a priestess in Anton LaVey's Church of Satan who had worked under the false strip club name of Sharon King and played the role of a vampire in Devilish ceremonies. Tate had been in several occult-themed films including playing the role of a vampire's victim. The sexy actress also portrayed a witch in a film and was, in real life, initiated into a witch coven headed by Alex Sanders. The Church of Satan and Sander's coven both drew heavily from the work of occultist Aleister Crowley (The Great Beast 666) who called for a destructive age. (25)

The Satanic Bible and Sander's *Book of Shadows* were both laden with Crowleyian themes. LaVey and Sanders both were members of Crowley's organizations as young men. LaVey was initiated into the Crowley founded OTO and Sanders stole his *Book of Shadows* from Gerald Gardner's witchcraft group Crowley had designed with Gardner in the 1940s. This links the occult practices of Atkins and her victim Tate in that they both belonged to the two major branches of Crowley's teaching. *The E True Hollywood Story* episode on Sharon Tate stated she claimed to have been visited by a ghost that informed her of impending death. When Aktins stabbed the pregnant actress, she was unknowingly merging the two schools of Crowley's occultism in a bloody ritual of death.

Some of the personal effects of the murdered victims, including credit cards, were taken by The Family and left in African American areas. Charlie hoped some unsuspecting black person would find and attempt to use one of the credit cards and get framed for the high-profile murders. This would trigger copycat crimes by other blacks and help ignite Helter Skelter. (26)

The Second Crucifixion of Christ

Ironically, as the Los Angeles police sought leads and witnesses concerning the gruesome murders over the next few weeks, they had some of the primary suspects in custody for unrelated offenses. After the Hinman, Tate and Libianca murders, Manson fled to Barker Ranch, but Charlie's illegal dune buggy business caught up with him, and he was arrested for grand theft auto and arson at the ranch while hiding in a cabinet under a sink. He set a vehicle on fire that blocked off a road to the ranch. Other members of The Family were also hauled in for being part of this auto theft ring. It was in prison that the murderous dingbat

Susan Atkins gave the police the break they needed. Atkins was implicated in the Hinman murder and sent to a different prison. (27)

Atkin's faith in Charlie was deep and heartfelt. She was so convinced of the unfolding of Helter Skelter that she began to spread The Family's message to her cellmates, not realizing most incarcerated individuals are more than willing to share information with the authorities to get a break on their own cases. (28) Court TV's crime library best sums up Atkin's weird behavior in jail:

While she was awaiting trial for the murder of Gary Hinman, Susan Atkins was placed in the Sybil Brand Institute, L.A.'s women's house of detention. Her bed was next to that of 31-year-old Ronnie Howard. Another inmate, Virginia Graham, was a close friend of Ronnie's. Susan Atkins was a real talker. She had an almost unbelievable story that Ronnie and Virginia listened to with absolute amazement.

Atkins acted like a nut case: dancing and singing at the oddest times, oblivious to the seriousness of the charges against her and bubbling over with laughter and delight without any apparent reason.

In the course of conversation, Susan told Virginia that she was in for first-degree murder.

"Did you do it?" Virginia wanted to know.

"Sure," Susan answered as though it were the most natural response in the world. But the police thought that she only held Hinman while Bob Beausoleil stabbed him. In reality, Susan said, it was she who stabbed Hinman while Beausoleil held him.

She also told Virginia that her lover Charlie was Jesus Christ and he was going to lead her to a hole in the Earth in Death Valley where there was a civilization down there. After hearing that story, Virginia was convinced that Atkins was completely nuts.

Several days later, on November 6, Susan was again in a talkative mood and mentioned the Sharon Tate murder. "You know who did it don't you?"

Virginia said she didn't.

"Well, you're looking at her."

Atkins still clung to the belief that Charlie was going to save her and take her to the subterranean paradise under Death Valley. Manson never denied being Jesus or telling others that he was Christ.

After Susan Atkins' cellmates informed on her to the prison authorities, the police had enough evidence to indict Manson and the four women who were at the murders. Tex Watson had fled to his native Texas and was fighting extradition back to California. Deputy District Attorney Vincent T. Bugliosi was assigned the

prosecution of Manson and the four women. His task was, from a legal perspective, nearly impossible as he had to convince the jury that Manson had instructed the women to commit the murders, and they would not have done so if he had not directly commanded to do so. In other words, he had to prove beyond reasonable doubt that Manson was a manipulative leader of a destructive cult who ordered his followers to kill. (29)

Soon his job became much easier when Linda Kasabian testified against the other four defendants and received immunity for doing so. The atmosphere around the courthouse was circus-like and somewhat morbid. Family members, led by Squeaky Fromme, held a vigil outside the court and performed publicity stunts in the hope of helping Charlie's cause. They sang songs, walked around on their hands and knees, and often screamed to reporters, "This is the Second Crucifixion of Christ!" From what we have seen, this was no metaphor; The Family thought Charlie was God. In 1970, they joined forces and recorded a LP of Charlie's folk songs to raise money for their savior's defense. (30)

The antics inside the court were just as surreal. On one occasion the three women lifted their skirts up and exposed themselves to the judge and sang, "The Old Gray Mare". They sporadically burst out and chanted hexes in Latin, carved "X" marks on their forehead and shaved themselves bald when Charlie did so. At another session, Manson flew across the room in a rage and nearly assaulted the presiding judge (who wore a revolver for the rest of the trial). (31)

Other strange instances which occurred during the trial seem uncanny and beyond explanation. There was the time when Charlie got hold of a newspaper which headlined Nixon's statement that the President thought Manson was guilty and flashed it before the jury hoping to cause a mistrial. Defense attorney Ronald Hughes was found murdered after he refused to let any of the girls testify as to vindicate Charlie. Bugliosi feared for his life and that of his family during the proceedings. The Family would badger and hex him in and out of court, and he would have to predetermine a safe place for his wife to pick him up after court recessed for the day. (32)

Manson and Bugliosi engaged in long staring contests in the courtroom, and the length of these sessions seemed eerie. On one occasion, Bugliosi's watch stopped during one of these gazing sessions and the young lawyer wondered if Charlie had used magical powers to stop it. In a January 2005 interview with this author, Bugliosi stated that if his watch had stopped again, then he would have really been frightened. The distinguished jurist never understood how Manson could engage in prolonged staring contests, not knowing until thirty-six years after the case that Charlie was using a technique taught in Scientology. Manson took L. Ron Hubbard's Communication Course in prison, which teaches how to make eye contact and how to gaze at someone without blinking for extended periods. However, Bugliosi generally beat Charlie in this strange game of staring until the other fellow blinked.

Despite all the fanfare and even bloodshed, the jury found all four defendants guilty, and they were sentenced to death. California did away with the death

penalty, and the sentences were reduced to life in prison. Tex Watson and Bobby Beausoleil were likewise sentenced to life in separate trials. After his incarceration, some of Charlie's disciples carried on the work of their God while others have found other religions.

Squeaky Fromme was arrested and sentenced to life in prison for attempting to assassinate President Gerald Ford in 1975. In 1987, Fromme briefly escaped from jail, sending a wave of fear throughout the film-making community. She was captured a few days later near Manson's prison and had broken out when she heard a rumor that her God was near death. Currently, she is held in the Federal Medical Facility at Carswell, Texas -- an institution for the criminally insane. Family member Sandra Good served ten years in prison for sending threatening letters to corporate executives. Currently, she runs Manson's official website ATWA -- an ecological group which seeks radical means to end pollution. (33)

Susan Aktins became a born-again Christian, as did Tex Watson. They have sought release under the contention that their new faith has changed them and they no longer pose a threat to society. Sharon Tate's mother never believed them and fought against their ever being released until her passing, and now other relatives seek to keep them incarcerated. (34)

Patricia Krenwinkel and Leslie Van Houten are still in prison and most likely will never be released. Family member Steve "Clem" Grogan was released from prison in 1986 after serving time for the murder of ranch hand Donald Shea. Bruce Davis remains in prison for his complicity in the murder of Hinman and Shea. (35)

Charles Manson currently resides in disciplinary custody (solitary confinement) in Corcoran State Prison for threatening staff members. Charles Manson claims that when he is released, he will relocate to distant India and shine like the sun and be his own Mahatma! (36)

Charles Manson Superstar

The allure of Charles Manson is astounding. No other convicted mass-murderer has had the press coverage and pop culture following as Charles Manson. This is quite disturbing considering the pure evil that emanates from this man and his followers. There has been a cottage industry around Manson and fans spend huge sums of money on Manson-related products. Even a cursory examination of the Manson phenomenon is astonishing.

Manson t-shirts, mugs, posters, greeting cards, calendars, and bumper stickers can be found for sale on the Internet. Manson-related movies, books, documentaries, and magazine articles flood the major retail outlets. This fascination is not healthy as a great deal of this material glorifies Manson and makes him out to be a worthwhile thinker. Charlie receives thousands of letters a month in his prison. This is quite sick considering the brutal murders he ordered against innocent,

harmless people. Such a fascination could easily lead to a copycat cult which might begin a new campaign of death.

The rock-and-roll world has embraced Manson, with such mega-bands as The Beach Boys, Nine Inch Nails, The Lemonheads, Guns 'N' Roses, Psychic TV, Sonic Youth, White Zombie, and Ozzy Osbourne recording songs by or about Manson. Shock-rocker Marilyn Manson takes his last name from Charlie. Several recordings by Charles Manson are available for sale including one that was recorded in and smuggled out of his prison. These pro-Manson recording artists influence millions of young people all over the world. Even the elitist culture of opera has felt Manson's influence with composer John Moran writing a full-length opera centering on the grisly Manson murders.

It is perilous for the above-mentioned celebrities to support and promote Manson's teaching. As mentioned, Manson's plan was to kick start Helter Skelter by brutally murdering successful people and copycat cults could emerge and take up this cause. According to the Manson Family Values website, Susan Atkins related some weird events surrounding the Sharon Tate murder:

Sadie [aka Susan Atkins] really enjoyed killing Sharon Tate. She later claimed that it was the most exciting sexual experience in her life. She recalled how she felt an urge to drink her blood. 'It was slick and I brought my hand to my face and I could smell the blood. I opened my mouth and licked it on my fingers...' She thought of carving out Tate's unborn child and bringing it to Charlie wrapped in a towel. 'How proud Charlie would be if I presented him with the baby cut from the womb of the woman?' She also considered cutting out the heart and eating it, and skewering the baby and roasting it in a bonfire.

Musicians and actors who promote Charles Manson, like Axl Rose, Evan Dando, and Ozzy Osbourne, should consider what the Manson Family planned to do after the Labianca murders. If Charlie and company had not been caught, they planned further celebrity murders; let's all hope some copycat Manson cult does not decide to go after the above-mentioned pro-Manson stars, which would be their first logical targets. This is not just conjecture. In 2004, actress Catharine Zeeta Jones was harassed by a Manson fan named Dwanette Knight who threatened to butcher the pregnant actress in the same manner as Sharon Tate.

For those who consider this sick killer a hero just consider what Charlie was planning if he and his followers were found innocent of the murders.

The Family planned to kidnap Frank Sinatra, skin him alive, and make purses out of his skin to sell at hippie shops. Steve McQueen was to be murdered. Tom Jones was to be raped and then have his throat slit. Richard Burton was to be castrated and his severed testicles were to be mailed to Eddie Fisher. Elizabeth Taylor was to have her eyes gouged out and have the words *Helter Skelter* carved into her forehead. (37)

End Notes

- 1) Bardsley, Marilyn, *Charles Manson: Serial Killer*, Court TV Crime Library:
http://www.crimelibrary.com/serial_killers/notorious/manson/16.html?sect=1
- 2) Schreck, Nicolas, *Charles Manson Superstar*, Screen Edge DVD 2002.
- 3-5) Bardsley: Court TV.
- 6) Bugliosi, Vincent, *Helter Skelter*, Bantam 1995 p. 241.
- 7) Bardsley: Court TV.
- 8) Mamatas, Nick, *The Process Church of the Final Judgment*, Disinfo 2002:
<http://www.disinfo.com/archive/pages/dossier/id275/pg1/>
- 9-11) Ronnie, *Charles Manson: A Musical Motive?* 1994:
http://earcandy_mag.tripod.com/rrcasecharlesmanson.htm
- 12-15) Schreck: 2002.
- 16) The Law Party, *The Franklin Cover-up*, 1999:
<http://www.thelawparty.com/FranklinCoverup/franklin.htm>
- 17) Bardsley: Court TV.
- 18) Schreck 2002.
- 19) Bardsley: Court TV.
- 20) O'Mahony, Bernard, *Death in Los Angeles*: <http://www.bernardmahoney.com> 21-
- 22) Bardsley: Court TV.
- 23-26) Schreck 2002.
- 27) Bardsley: Court TV.
- 28) Schreck 2002.
- 29-35) Bardsley: Court TV.
- 36) *Denver Post* 2/9/03.
- 37) BBC *Infamous Criminals* : <http://www.bbc.co.uk/crime/caseclosed/charlesmanson.shtml>

3

Twenty-two Disciples of Hell

On July 29, 1976, two young women, Donna Lauria and Jody Valenti, were talking in a parked car in front of Lauria's apartment building in the Bronx, New York City. Because of the dangerous hour (1:00 AM), Lauria's parents stopped by the car on their way home from an evening out and told her it was time to come upstairs. Donna agreed that she would.

Just after her mom and dad left Donna noticed a very strange-looking man standing alongside the passenger side of the car. "Who is this guy?" she asked. "What does he want?" The strange man drew a pistol, squatted down, and pumped five rounds into the car. Donna expired immediately from a neck wound. Jody, shot in the leg, hit the horn while the strange man continued pumping the trigger, even though he ran out of ammo. Jody fled the car, hysterically screaming for help. Donna's father, hearing the commotion, ran down the stairs and out the front door. Wearing only pajamas and still barefoot, he sped in his car to the hospital, hoping that the doctors could save his profusely bleeding daughter, but she had already died. (1)

The detectives assigned to the case could find no motive for the attack. There was no apparent connection between the killer and the victims. They concluded that it was a case of either a mob hit wherein the killers mistook the girls for their target or that the killer was a crackpot. Jody, still shell-shocked from the attack, managed to give a vague description of the assailant. The police had nothing to go on and failed to capture the shooter. (2)

On October 23, 1976, almost three months after Donna Lauria's grisly murder, twenty-year-old Carl Denaro partied with his friends at a Queens bar. He had enlisted in the Air Force for a four-year hitch and was out on the town with his childhood pals as it would be quite sometime before he would return home to New York City. Rosemary Keenan, whom Denaro knew from college, came to the bar to join in the going away party. (3)

The festivities at the popular drinking whole broke up just after 2:30 AM and Carl drove Rosemary home. The couple parked near Rosemary's house and talked. A strange man appeared out of nowhere on the passenger side of the car. He was holding a gun and rapidly discharged five shots into the car, hitting Carl in the head and then disappearing as quickly as he came. Dazed from the attack, Rosemary drove the car back to the bar and patrons rushed Carl to the hospital. Surgeons replaced a part of Denaro's shattered skull with a metal plate and his injuries would plague him for the rest of his life -- destroying what could have been a successful military career. (4)

A little over a month later, on November 26, 1976, sixteen-year-old Donna DeMasi and her eighteen-year-old friend Joanne Lomino were coming home from a late night movie. The bus dropped the pair near Joanne's house. Joanne noticed a strange man following them. She urged her friend to speed up, and the pair was just in front of Joanne's house when the man addressed them. The stranger started to ask them directions before drawing his pistol and firing at them. The shooter then fled by foot. (5)

Joanne's family heard the shots and screams. They emerged from their house to help the girls. At the hospital, surgeons concluded that Donna would totally recover from her wounds. The bullet had passed within a quarter inch of her spine and tumbled out of her body. Her friend Joanne was not as lucky. Her spine had been severely shattered by the bullet. The doctors determined she would live but would never walk again and would be confined to a wheelchair for the rest of her life. (6)

Two months later, on January 30, 1977, the killer struck again. Twenty-six-year-old Christine Freund and her boyfriend John Diel left a wine bar in Queens just after midnight and strolled toward his car. The young couple was too fixated on each other to observe the strange man who had been stalking them. As the pair sat in the car, two gun blasts shattered the windshield. Both shots struck Christine in the head and John, unharmed, ran for help, trying to summon a passing car, but no one stopped to help. The shooter fled a split second after he fired the second shot. People in nearby homes were awoken by the shots and had called the police. Christine died in the hospital just before dawn. (7)

On March 8, 1977, an attractive young college student named Virginia Voskerichian was walking home from her classes in the affluent Forest Hills Gardens section of New York. From all accounts, Virginia was an industrious young woman who had fled Eastern European communism with her family in the late 1950s. As she walked toward her house, a strange man approached her from the opposite direction. When the man got close, he pulled out a .44 pistol and aimed it at her head. Virginia pathetically raised her books to shield her from the bullets, but a single shot hit her square in the face, and she keeled over dead with blood gushing from her skull onto the pavement.

As the gunman fled he brushed up against a passer-by and said, "Hi mister." He then continued to flee. The shooter also passed a police squad car that was rushing to the scene of the disturbance. (8)

Over a month later, the deranged killer struck again. On April 17, 1977, a young couple sat necking in their parked car near the Hutchinson River Parkway, just a short walk from where Donna Lauria had been gunned down a year earlier. Eighteen-year-old Valentina Suriani, who dreamed of a career in show business, sat in the car with her twenty-year-old boyfriend Alexander Esau, who was employed by a tow truck company. (9)

In the early hours of that Sunday morning, another car pulled up alongside them. Its driver produced a firearm and shot both of them twice. Valentina died

immediately and Alexander expired not long after. At this juncture, the police had no clear description of the murderer. However, on this occasion the unhinged killer took the time to leave a note addressed to lead police investigator Captain Joseph Borrelli. The note complained about Borrelli referring to him as “a women hater” in the press and also contained the odd notation “I am the Monster Beelzebub” and included the moniker by which this serial killer would become known. The ruthless shooter signed the letter Son of Sam. (10)

The killer also wrote to journalist Jimmy Breslin and included the following weird description, “*Duke of Death. Wicked King Wicker. The twenty-two Disciples of Hell. And lastly, John Wheaties, rapist and suffocator [sic] of young girls. P.S., drive on, think positive, get off your butts, knock on coffins, etc.*” (11)

On June 26, 1977, Judy Placido turned to Sal Lupo, the young man she was talking with after leaving Elephas, a disco in Queens, and suggested it was time for him to take her home after their night of partying. The normally packed disco was almost empty at 3:00 AM. The Son of Sam killings had thinned out crowds all across the city, and the livelihood of service industry workers who were dependant on tips from customers began to be threatened. The couple climbed into Sal’s car and began to chat. (12)

“This Son of Sam is really scary,” Judy told Sal. “The way that guy comes out of nowhere. You never know where he’ll hit next.” This turned out to be almost prophetic. Placido later recalled, “All of a sudden, I heard echoing in the car. There wasn’t any pain, just ringing in my ears. I looked at Sal, and his eyes were open wide, just like his mouth. There were no screams. I don’t know why I didn’t scream.” (13)

“All the windows had been closed. I couldn’t understand what this pounding noise was. After that, I felt disoriented, dazed,” she recalled. (14) At first, Sal thought the car had been pelted with rocks so he ran back to the disco for help. Judy looked in the rearview mirror and discovered she was covered in blood, and her right arm was paralyzed. She fell to the ground as she bolted back to the nightclub. Sal had also been hit in the arm. The pair was extremely fortunate because Judy had been shot three times but miraculously avoided serious injury, and Sal only suffered a minor flesh wound. Son of Sam had struck again. Ironically, a New York City detective had been outside the Elephas disco just fifteen minutes before the shooting. Once the alert came over his car radio, the detective returned to the scene. Judy and Sal could not offer any information about the identity of the assailant, as they never caught a glimpse of him. (15)

On July 31, 1977, Stacy Moskowitz, a lively young woman, sat with her attractive boyfriend, Bobby Violante, in his father’s car. They had gone to the movie theater and parked in a secluded spot near Gravesend Bay in Brooklyn. “How about taking a walk in the park?” the young man has asked. “What if the Son of Sam is hiding there?” Stacy replied. “This is Brooklyn, not Queens. Come on,” he reassured her. They exited the car and strolled over to the park swings. Bobby leaned over to kiss her, and she saw something. (16)

“Someone's looking at us,” Stacy muttered. Bobby saw a strange man nearby, but the stranger disappeared behind some parked cars. Stacy was concerned and wanted to go back to the car and leave, but Bobby pressed her to stay for a few minutes while they necked. (17)

“All of a sudden,” Bobby later recalled, “I heard like a humming sound. First, I thought I heard glass break. Then, I didn't hear Stacy anymore. I didn't feel anything, but I saw her fall away from me. I don't know who got shot first, her or me.” (18)

Bobby Violante had been hit by two bullets in the face. Stacy received one round in the head. Bobby could hear Stacy's moaning. He leaned on the car's horn and then pulled himself from the car and screamed for his life. (19)

When the police arrived, Stacy and Bobby were quickly sent on their way to Coney Island Hospital. Stacy's parents arrived at the hospital just to find out their beloved daughter was to be moved to a better hospital that specialized in head trauma.

Together, the parents of the young couple helplessly waited for hours as surgeons worked to save their children. A day later, Tracy died and Bobby Violante survived, but he had lost his left eye and had only 20% vision in his right eye. He was more or less blinded by the attack and lost the love of his life. (20)

A major development occurred a couple of days after the Moskowitz-Violante shooting. Mrs. Cacilia Davis, a middle-aged Austrian woman, came forward with the claim that she had seen the man who shot the couple. Detective Joe Strano of the NYPD went to see her at her home on Bay 17th Street, only a block away from the scene of the fatal shooting. Davis told Strano that she had to walk her dog Snowball in the wee hours of the morning of the killing. She suspected a man was following her. “...he looked like he was trying to hide behind a tree. But the tree was too small, too narrow. He stood out. He kept staring in my direction. Then he began walking in my direction, smiling a peculiar smile. It wasn't anything sinister, just a friendly kind of smile, almost.” (21)

When Strano got a closer look at the stranger, she thought she saw a gun concealed in his coat. “I was frightened. I walked into my house and began to slip off Snowball's collar. Just then I heard pops, or something that sounded like firecrackers. They were kind of loud, but far off. I didn't think too much of it at the time.” (22)

“The next morning ... there were crowds of people at Shore Road. It was then that I learned what happened the night before. Suddenly, I realized I must have seen the killer. I panicked, and I couldn't say anything ... I would never forget his face until the day I die. It was frightening.” she stated. (23)

Another major development occurred when the police were contacted by property owner Sam Carr, who came by to complain about how his dogs had been shot to death in his yard by a neighbor. He also told the police that this tenant had

written him some unhinged letters that were incoherent and somewhat similar to the letters sent by the Son of Sam killer. The police detectives checked to see if any parking violations occurred in the vicinity of the last murders and formed a short list of ticketed car owners. One of the issued tickets corresponded to the name of the same person Sam Carr had accused of shooting his dogs. A reported arson offense also yielded the same man's name. (24)

The police put the suspect under surveillance on August 8, 1977 and approached him as he exited his apartment. The suspect was carrying a paper bag. The man was heavy set with dark hair, and he strolled toward his Ford Galaxy. The police waited for the man to get into the car to make sure it was the owner of the ticketed car and waited until he put the paper bag on the passenger seat. "Let's go!" a detective ordered, and the officers surrounded the car. The suspect did not see the approaching figures. A detective came from the rear of the car and pressed the barrel of his police revolver against the man's head. "Freeze!" he yelled. "Police!" (25)

The man inside the car turned around and smiled moronically at the police detail. The detective gave him very explicit instructions to slowly get out of the car and put his hands up on the roof. The man quietly obeyed, still wearing his disturbed smile. (26)

"Now that I've got you," the detective barked, "who have I got?"

"You know," the man said politely.

"No, I don't. You tell me."

Still smiling his weird smile, he answered, "I'm Sam. David Berkowitz." (27)

Finding the Devil

[Richard] David Falco Berkowitz was born June 1, 1953 and takes his last name from the family who adopted him. Berkowitz described having a lonely childhood in which he constantly struggled with the fact that he was adopted and not wanted by his birth mother. He also mentioned deep-rooted psychological problems that he experienced as a child:

Ever since I was a small child, my life seemed to be filled with torment. I would often have seizures in which I would roll on the floor. Sometimes furniture would get knocked over. When these attacks came, it felt as if something was entering me.

My mother, who has long since passed away, had no control over me. I was like a wild and destructive animal. My father had to pin me to the floor until these attacks stopped.

When I was in public school, I was so violent and disruptive that a teacher, who had become so angry at me, grabbed me in a headlock and threw me out of his classroom.

I was getting into a lot of fights, too. Sometimes I started screaming for no reason at all. My parents were then ordered by school officials to take me to a child psychologist or else I would be expelled. I had to go to this psychologist once per week for two years. Yet Therapy sessions had no affect on my behavior.

During this period of my life I was also plagued with bouts of severe depression. When this feeling came over me, I would hide under my bed for hours. I would also lock myself in a closet and sit in total darkness from morning until afternoon. I had a craving for the darkness and I felt an urge to flee away from people. (28)

Berkowitz claimed he suffered from great mental disorders and behavioral difficulties which would haunt him for the rest of his life. His tumultuous actions were accented by tantrums and wild acting out. David Berkowitz also claims something much more nefarious was entering his life:

Occasionally, this same evil force would come upon me in the middle of the night. When this would happen I felt an urge to sneak out of the house and wander the dark streets. I roamed the neighborhood like an alley cat and would creep back into the house by climbing the fire escape. My parents would never know that I was gone.

I continually worried and frightened my parents because I behaved so strangely. At times I would go the entire day without talking to them. I would stay in my room talking to myself. My parents could not reach me, not even with all of their love. Many times, I saw them break down and cry because they saw that I was such a tormented person. (29)

The future serial killer began setting fires and causing all sorts of problems. He began drinking heavily and running with the wrong crowd. Pyromania and pornography became a huge part of Berkowitz's teenage years. Never feeling that he fit in, young David sought solace in the very dark regions of the human mind. This morose state did not go unnoticed by his parents as Berkowitz later mentioned:

Thoughts of suicide often came into my mind. Sometimes I spent time sitting on a window ledge with my legs dangling over the side. We lived on the 6th floor of an old apartment building. When my dad saw me doing this he would yell at me to get back inside.

I also felt powerful urges to step in front of moving cars or throw myself in front of subway trains. At times those urges were so strong that my body actually trembled. I remember that it was a tremendous struggle for me to hold on to my sanity.

I had no idea what to do and neither did my parents. They had me talk to a rabbi, teachers and school counselors, but nothing worked. (30)

Like many disturbed adolescents, Berkowitz fought off suicidal thoughts and a cruel blow struck him when he was just fourteen:

When I was fourteen my mother was stricken with cancer and within several months she was dead. I had no other brothers or sisters, and so it was just me and my dad. He had to work ten hours per day, six days per week. So we spent very little time together.

For the most part, my mother was my source of stability. With her now gone, however, my life quickly went downhill. I was filled with anger at the loss of my mom. I felt hopeless and my periods of depression were more intense than ever. I also became even more rebellious and began to cut out of school.

Yet my dad tried to help as best as he could. He managed to push me through high school. (31)

Despite his depressive and suicidal tendencies Berkowitz was allowed to join the US Army after finishing high school. He served for three years with honor and was stationed in Korea guarding the demilitarized zone. Military life proved boring and Berkowitz wound up disenchanted with the army. He sought the battlefields of Vietnam and the action it would bring, but the army had other ideas. The armed service proved a great disappointment to the young man, and his duties turned out to be quite dull. When his time of service was up, Berkowitz returned to his native New York, enrolled in junior college, and took a job as a low-wage security guard. (32)

In his desire to adjust and fit into society, Berkowitz began to socialize with a group of students who were involved in the occult:

I got out of the service in 1974 to start life again as a civilian. All my friends that I knew before had either married or moved away. So I found myself alone and living in New York City.

In 1975, however, I met some guys at a party who were, I later found out, heavily involved in the occult. I had always been fascinated with witchcraft, Satanism, and occult things since I was a child. When I was growing up, I watched countless horror and satanic movies, one of which was Rosemary's Baby. That movie in particular totally captivated my mind.

Now I was age 22 and this evil force was still reaching out to me. Everywhere I went there seemed to be a sign or a symbol pointing me to Satan. I felt as if something were trying to take control of my life. I began to read the Satanic Bible by the late Anton LaVey who founded the Church of Satan in San Francisco in 1966. I began, innocently, to practice various occult rituals and incantations.

I am utterly convinced that something satanic had entered into my mind and that, looking back at all that happened, I realize that I had been slowly deceived. I did

not know that bad things were going to result from all this. Yet over the months the things that were wicked no longer seemed to be such. I was headed down the road to destruction and I did not know it. Maybe I was at a point where I just didn't care anymore. (33)

The Children of the Process

According to Maury Terry in his book *The Ultimate Evil* (2004), David Berkowitz was actually getting involved with a spin-off of the Process Church of the Final Judgment. As mentioned, the Process Church was formed in the mid-1960s by Robert and Mary Anne Moore DeGrimston. Their belief system focused on the conviction that Jesus and Satan were different aspects of the same deity. The DeGrimstons' theology centered on the coming End Times and the need to identify with God and Lucifer and, in this regard, they constitute a diabolical religion. The cult grew and recruited young, wealthy people who could contribute vast resources to the organization and young wayward youth who could be manipulated into serving the organization unconditionally. Branches of the Process Church could be found in every major city in the North America and in Europe. In 1975, a little over ten years after its founding, the De Grimstons disbanded the Church and destroyed all of its records. The rift allegedly came because the couple suffered from sexual problems.

Maury Terry theorized that the Process Church splintered into various sects and went underground and continued to practice this odd faith and recruit new members. One of these offshoots was known as The Children, and it was they who recruited the young Satanist David Berkowitz. In 1997, Berkowitz himself acknowledged that he was part of this Process Church spin-off group and that he was *not* the only shooter in the rampage of death which left six people dead and many others permanently disabled. This revelation came as a bombshell to the hordes of skeptics who originally disavowed Terry's central thesis that Berkowitz did not act alone.

Evidence of Multiple Shooters

Right after Berkowitz's arrest there were suspicions as to whether he was a lone shooter. His initial claim that his neighbor's dog ordered him to murder people randomly made the young man seem to be a mental case plain and simple. However, the eyewitness testimonies from the various murders describe the shooter as looking nothing like David Berkowitz. Berkowitz immediately confessed to all of the shootings just after his arrest and also took responsibility for the Satanic letters. Eventually, he was sentenced to six consecutive life terms. He is currently housed at the Sullivan Correctional Facility in upstate New York and expects to spend the rest of his life in jail. He was nearly murdered by another inmate in 1979 when Berkowitz had his throat slit after a petty dispute. David's

behavior was so unruly when he started his sentence he was nicknamed Berserkowitz. Despite the 365 years in prison it earned him, Berkowitz continued to practice black magic in prison and threatened to hex guards, social workers and other inmates. (34)

Berkowitz's life took a dramatic change when he converted to Christianity and renounced his former association with the occult. He became a born-again Christian and many in the evangelical community consider his experience to be a legitimate path to conversion. In his effort to spread the gospel, Berkowitz has set up a web page where he shares the story of his move from venerating the Devil to becoming a Christ-centered Christian. As part of his penance, David Berkowitz does not actively seek release from prison and refuses to attend his parole hearings, which automatically come up by law every few years. (35)

Despite his initial confession to all of the crimes, there is mounting proof that he was not the only killer involved in the shootings.

One of the letters Berkowitz sent to the police contained references to other individuals who were involved in the crime. Several years after his arrest, Berkowitz openly accused other persons of involvement in a Satanic group which operated near his former Yonkers apartment and who participated in the murders. Among them were two brothers, John and Michael Carr, relatives of Sam Carr, his landlord. John's nickname was "Wheaties" -- a name used in one of the Son of Sam letters. Two other Devil worshipers -- referred to as the "Joker" and the "Duke of Death" -- lived nearby. There was also the mention in one letter of the 22 Disciples of Hell, which could imply the actual number of members who were involved in the shootings or could be the name of the coven. (36)

None of the individuals accused by David Berkowitz were ever charged with any crime. Nevertheless, several fled before the authorities could question them. Berkowitz has confessed to attempting to bolster his insanity defense in the weeks after his arrest by concocting the whole dog story. Although such an attempt would automatically raise issues of future credibility, certain facts do suggest a cabal behind the Son of Sam murders. (37)

One supporting piece of evidence of multiple shooters centers on the untimely deaths of the Carr brothers within two years of Berkowitz's arrest. John Carr was found shot in the face in February 1978 with the number 666 allegedly found carved into the 31-year-old Carr's hand, and the death was deemed a suicide. Despite having a medically documented allergy to alcohol, 27-year-old Michael Carr perished in a drunk-driving accident on October 4, 1979. Andrew Dupay, a 33-year-old postman who both lived and worked in the Berkowitz-Carr area for years was found dead of an apparent suicide. In the note he left, Dupay stated his life had been threatened on more than one occasion. Perhaps the postal worker stumbled onto Berkowitz's cult and knew too much. (38)

Some further evidence demonstrates there was a Satanic cult in operation in the same area that Berkowitz claims The Children were recruiting. Even twenty-five years after the Summer of Sam, the Satanic activity in this area has become urban

legend. The physical characteristics of Untermyer Park, near where Berkowitz lived, in particular made it a perfect location for conducting covert ceremonies within its thick wooded surroundings.

Furthermore, the area to this day is marked by Satanic graffiti -- some of it decades old and others only recently applied. With the rise of Hispanics in the neighborhood, the remains of Santeria animal sacrifices have also been discovered in the park. (39)

Former employees of nearby St. John's Hospital to this day can recall nights when chanting and torch flames were seen and heard coming from the section of Untermyer Park where Berkowitz claimed Luciferian rites were performed. Some locals maintain that harmless teenagers were the only ones frequenting the backwoods of the park during the Son of Sam killings. On closer examination, however, some other disturbing evidence has come to light, which further proves the existence of a dangerous coven. In 1976, some butchered Alsatian dogs, with their ears carefully removed, were found just south of Untermyer Park. Three years later, a Westchester County Police Officer happened upon a group of robed and hooded figures carrying torches and leading two leashed Alsatis. (40)

Similar dog killings were reported elsewhere in the area at the time. In Walden, New York, 85 Alsatis were found skinned between October 1976 and October 1977. Across the state line, in Fairfield County, Connecticut, an employee at a local radio station reported seeing Druid-like ceremonies in a secluded area near his home. (41)

The fact that dogs were killed brings up a very strange update on the whole Son of Sam case. After she left her husband in 1975, Mary Anne DeGrimston started the Best Friends Animal Sanctuary, which is the nation's largest non-kill animal shelter. Startling accusations of animal abuse were reported by a former worker of Best Friends, who claims the organization actually abuses animals. The primary movers of Best Friends were the former members of the Process Church of the Final Judgment. This state of affairs makes one question the actual reason for the existence of this "animal rights organization". (42)

In a 2002 interview, Maury Terry insists that Berkowitz did not act alone and was merely a player in a larger game of orchestrated Satanic murder:

Absolutely. ... In my opinion, the evidence is overwhelming and conclusive. I conducted a televised interview with David Berkowitz back in the 1990s. He claimed to have pulled the trigger for only two of the Son of Sam attacks, and publicly named John and Michael Carr as two of the other Son of Sam shooters. Even the New York City police eventually conceded the likelihood of multiple gunmen. Furthermore, if you compare the Lomino/DeMasi police composites [a reference to two 1976 shooting victims] with a photo of John Carr, the resemblance is striking. (43)

End Notes

1-27) Bardsley, Marilyn, *Son of Sam: David Berkowitz*, Court TV Crime Library:
<http://www.crimelibrary.com/about/authors/bardsley/index.html>

28-33) Berkowitz, David, *Forgiven for Life: Personal Testimony*: <http://www.forgivenforlife.com/1a-testimony.html>

34-35) Maier, Bill, "Interview with David Berkowitz", Focus on the Family 2004:
http://www.oneplace.com/Ministries/Focus_on_the_Family/Archives.asp

36-41) Sanders, John V. "Son of Sam Revisited" *Fortean Times*:
http://www.forteanimes.com/articles/161_sonofsam.shtml

42) Corbin Michael, "Interview with Maury Terry", *A Closer Look* (aired April 15, 2004).

43) Fortean Times August 2002: http://www.forteanimes.com/articles/161_sonofsam.shtml

4

Night Stalker

In 1987, actor Sean Penn was serving thirty-two days in a California jail for attacking an extra on a movie set. The actor had seen his share of troubles with his hot temper and tumultuous marriage to the pop singer Madonna. As he sat in his cell, he read a note sent to him by a fellow inmate who admired the actor's career. Penn wrote the prisoner a brief reply stating that most men in prison feel some bond, but Penn stated he felt no connection with the extremely deranged inmate who was on trial for a series of ritualistic murders. The autograph-seeking inmate was Richard Ramirez who was known as the Night Stalker and was responsible for a series of grisly satanic murders in the mid-1980s. (1)

Richard Ramirez was born on February 29, 1960 to Mexican immigrants in Texas and was the youngest child in a family of five offspring. The family struggled with money problems and all five children suffered from either physical or emotional disabilities that caused a great deal of tension. Richard suffered from epilepsy and constantly had fits as a child. He forged a close relationship with his older sister Ruth who looked after Richard while both parents went out to work to support the family. At the age of twelve, Richard became close to his cousin Mike -- a former Green Beret who dazzled the boy with war stories that were filled with gory details. The former Special Forces soldier also introduced Richard to marijuana and would often socialize with the boy while smoking grass. Young Richard was shown cousin Mike's collection of Polaroid photos from Vietnam, including photos of mutilated corpses and other horrific war scenes. Cousin Mike would brag about how he would abduct Vietnamese women and their pre-adolescent daughters and rape and torture them to death and loved to kill the offspring first while the mother watched. (2)

The former Green Beret also instructed Richard in the basic techniques of self-defense and the art of killing with knives -- skills which Richard used with great dexterity during his adult career as a serial killer. Cousin Mike also taught Richard the rudiments of nighttime operations by using darkness and shadows to move and enter buildings undetected. This particular skill would aid Richard in his later rampage of death and rape. (3)

Cousin Mike had a hot temper and was known for his rage-filled outbursts and would fight at the drop of a hat. Richard became Mike's sidekick and the boy never tired of hearing about his favorite cousin's tales of wartime glory and sexual exploits. However, Mike's wife became tired of the constant talk of killing and death, which led to very drastic action. One day while Richard and Mike were talking, Mike's wife interrupted and the couple erupted into a fierce screaming match that ended when Mike brandished a pistol and shot his wife in the head. Young Richard saw the woman's blood gurgled out of the gunshot wound, and this acted as a kind of nefarious baptism. The Vietnam veteran faced murder charges,

but the court took mercy on the former soldier and committed him to a mental institution. (4)

Richard dropped out of high school and began a sojourn of marijuana and LSD use. Like many teenagers, he began listening to heavy metal music and especially enjoyed the more devilish sounds of bands like AC/DC. Richard took the occultism these bands proffered to heart and began taking Devil worship seriously. The heavy LSD and marijuana use caused him to start to see visions of Lucifer, and Richard began to identify himself as a disciple of Satan. Richard took a part-time job in a hotel and was arrested for sexually assaulting a female guest when he was just fifteen. The woman's husband returned and harshly beat Richard until the police arrived. The judge was lenient and let him off with a slap on the wrist and only gave him probation. (5)

Cousin Mike was released from the mental hospital about this time and the two took off right where they left off by smoking pot and chatting about murder. Richard also began a career as a petty burglar and was adept at breaking and entering. He also became more and more sexually obsessed, especially as his drug addiction began to overcome what little reason he possessed. On one occasion, he went to LA to visit his older brother who was a thief and a heroin addict. The adolescent liked the California lifestyle with its free-wheeling attitude and ready supply of illicit drugs and loose women. By the time he turned 18, Richard was an accomplished burglar and drug addict as well as being a devout disciple of the Devil. (6)

A Satanic Initiate

In 1978, Richard Ramirez left Texas for the fast life in California and was only concerned with illicit drugs, sex and Satanism. A close friend, who chooses to remain nameless, recalled his frame of mind:

...He was drawn to musical groups whose rhythms were hard-driving and whose lyrics had something to do with his innermost thoughts on religion and sex... He no longer believed in the Catholic Church. ...Intense sadistic sexual images filled Richard's head. ... For such thoughts, Jesus Christ, he knew, would scorn him and make sure he went to hell and stayed there forever. ..

...Unlike Jesus, Satan would not scorn him, but embrace him and give him solace, protection and understanding... (7)

Ramirez's own sister wondered about his frame of mind and odd beliefs:

"Why Satan, Richie?" she wanted to know.

"Because Satan represents what I feel. I'm not like other people. I'm different ...I've got a trade. I'm a thief, Ruth ... and a good one ... I'm not going to any jail. I'm protected." (8)

When he arrived in Los Angeles, Ramirez stayed with his brother, but he had a falling out after trying to sexually abuse his sister-in-law. Ramirez's criminal career began to increase, especially after he switched his drug of choice from PCP to cocaine, which was a much more expensive habit. In his bid for drug money, Ramirez became an accomplished thief, who stole whatever valuables he could get his hands on. Richard became more and more brazen in his crimes and would linger around the homes he broke into -- sometimes while people were sleeping in their beds in the next room. (9)

According to Bill Kurtis on his A&E *American Justice* program, Ramirez was arrested for petty theft and sent to prison where he struck up a friendship with another prisoner who was also a Devil worshiper. Although he considered himself a Satanist since his early teen years, this jailhouse initiation ceremony marked a new chapter in his life -- one that would make the legal authorities wish they never set him free. The details of Richard's relationship with this prisoner are hard to come by, but it is clear that whatever did happen changed Richard into a far more vicious and dangerous criminal than he already was. (10)

Richard Ramirez spoke of his early encounter with other Satanists in a recent interview on the *Welcome to the Madness* web page:

It was about 1980, and I was hustling on the streets. I landed in jail for a month or two for petty theft. I met up with this guy who was a Satan worshiper. For those two months I was with him, then I got out of jail, but my mind didn't. I remembered everything he said, which basically was, "Why worship the good guy, when the things you do aren't so good?" Somehow it just made sense to me, to worship something that would protect you in what you were doing...

It developed slowly. I started reading the books, and then I started meeting people who were into the same thing. Satanists need to have more faith than Christians, because Christ was seen and felt. Lucifer has never felt the need to be seen, but in everyone's soul he can be felt. Many small cults practice Satanism nowadays, but not in a violent form. They're only looking for ways to play out wickedness. (11)

Ramirez biographer Philip Carlo noted that Richard visited Satanic High Priest Anton LaVey and even stayed with The Black Pope at the Church of Satan headquarters for over a week and participated in several sinister ceremonies. Ramirez was dazzled by the huckster LaVey and struck up a friendship with LaVey's daughter Zeena. Richard saw the fulfillment LaVey's teachings in criminal activity and heartless murder. In this regard, the Church of Satan acted as an ideological justification for his debased crimes. Richard never sought to include any cohorts in his actual murders but was certainly highly influenced by the Church of Satan and its promotion of diabolical activity.

Various researchers including the Court TV writing staff go out of their way to downplay the role of Satanism in the Ramirez's crimes, often leaving out the Satanic evidence collected at various crime scenes. They claim his motivation centered more on his strange childhood and the fact that he witnessed his cousin Mike kill his wife. However, this is a gross underestimation of the role of Devil

worship in the life and crimes of Richard Ramirez as a detailed examination of his murderous rampage will cogently demonstrate.

Night Stalker

By 1984, Richard Ramirez was a 24-year-old ex-con and career criminal with a harsh addiction to cocaine and a morbid need to worship Satan. Although Ramirez was a “lone-practitioner” of the black arts, at this juncture his devotion was far deeper than the dilettantes and attention-seekers who adopt this way of life as a means of feeling special. A large majority of the leadership and membership of Satanic organizations like Anton LaVey, Boyd Rice, and Shane Bugbee are high school drop outs and adopted Luciferian views as a means to generate self-esteem. Ramirez, on the other hand, was driven by a compulsive need to adore the Devil and do his criminal bidding in this world. In this regard, Richard’s psychosis would automatically lead him to more and more daring forms of illegal activity which would eventually segue into child molestation, rape of the elderly and murder accented with mutilation.

The first victim Richard chose was a 79-year-old woman named Jennie Vincow who lived in Glassell Park, California and who made the mistake of leaving her ground floor window opened during a hot June day. Ramirez merely removed the screen and entered the apartment. He brutally raped the old woman and then stabbed her to death, nearly decapitating her in the process. He ransacked her apartment for valuables to feed his drug habit. Ramirez left a few fingerprints, but the police had little to go on. (12)

Like most serial killers, Ramirez enjoyed his first kill and pondered on it for some time. This constitutes a sort of “diabolical mysticism”. For the deranged mind, the act of remembering the first act of murder quells the need to kill for a short period. It seems that this first act of total murder, which most serial killers claim is the fulfillment of years and years of fantasizing, leaves them with a euphoric feeling that they bask in for some time. Generally, there is a lull in their killing spree as they re-enact the crime in their mind over and over again. After some time passes, they usually are impressed with their warped crimes and start to get a feeling of invincibility and enjoy a self-generated power trip. Ramirez sincerely thought he would never get caught, believing Satan would save him from criminal prosecution. This initial elation lasted for seven months and then Richard once again felt the need for evil action. (13)

On February 25, 1985 Ramirez abducted a 6-year-old girl at a bus stop and stuffed her in a laundry bag, and took her away in his car. He raped her and then dropped her off to ponder this violation of her innocence for the rest of her life (a fate worse than death for many victims). Two weeks later, Richard abducted a 9-year-old girl from her bedroom, raped her, and left her in a deserted park, sentencing her to a life of torment and horrible memories. Richard must have been aware that raping a child was far more nefarious than murdering one. (14)

On March 17, 1985 Richard decided the time was ripe for more bloodshed and broke into a condo in Rosemead, shooting 34-year-old Dayle Okazaki in the head and also firing upon the other occupant, Maria Hernandez, before escaping. Hernandez survived and offered the police another description of this bizarre killer, stating he was narrow-faced, had dark curly hair, and rotting teeth. Ramirez never practiced oral or basic hygiene believing that is what his Dark Lord would want. (15)

Ramirez was on a role and sacrificed another victim to Satan that same day when he abducted 30-year-old Tsa Lian Yu from her vehicle and shot her several times, leaving her dead in a pool of blood. As a means to satisfy the Prince of Darkness, Ramirez abducted a preteen girl from her Eagle Rock home, sexually abused her, and left her alive to relive the violation for the rest of her life. (16)

At this juncture, the authorities began a massive manhunt and realized there was a connection between the murders and the rapes of the pre-adolescent girls. They were stumped and never had encountered a murderer who followed up his killing by raping a prepubescent girl. The motivation for the murder and rape was certainly some form of thrill kill with sexual perversion as the icing on this new brand of Devil's cake. The police were stumped because, like all serial killers and serial rapists, there was no connection between victim and murderer, and they had to wait for more people to die and more children to be raped to get any leads. Their wait was short. (17)

The Night Stalker took his game of death to the Whittier section of Los Angeles on March 27 and broke into the home of 64-year-old Vincent Zazzara and his wife Maxine. Ramirez bludgeoned the old man to death and then murdered his wife in an even more bizarre fashion. Richard would always slaughter the male right away when he broke into a home, recalling the time in the hotel when the husband of his victim caught him in the act of rape and pummeled him. As a means of letting his Satanic intent known, Richard stabbed Maxine to death and carved out her eyes and took them away with him. It must be recalled that this was the same Satanic calling card (known as a "signature" in forensic science) that Charles Manson planned to use and is what killer Ricky Kasso did to his victim. This sends a clear message to the occult underground that a Devil worshiper is on the loose and conducting human sacrifices. The bodies sat rotting in the house for two days until they were discovered. (18)

Richard waited a month and a half until he struck again. He forced his way into the home of Harold Wu and shot the 66-year-old Asian American in the head. After viciously beating the 63-year-old Mrs. Wu, he stole her valuables and savagely raped the elderly woman. As if raised from the dead, the crusty Harold Wu emerged from his bed with blood rushing from his head and made his way to a telephone to call the police who dispatched emergency services. By the time they arrived, Richard had escaped. Mr. Wu died a few hours later and Mrs. Wu lived and was able to give a description of the assailant who was soon to be referred to as the "Night Stalker" by the popular media. (19)

A few weeks later, the Night Stalker entered the home of Ruth Wilson, a 41-year-old mother from Burbank. He held her at gunpoint and ordered her 12-year-old son out of bed, locking him in a closet. Richard tied up Ruth Wilson with panty hose and raped and sodomized the middle-aged woman. After the sexual assault, Richard chose to let the woman live and removed her son from the closet. He handcuffed the mother and son side by side and departed. The boy was able to get to a telephone and the police arrived. The hysterical Ruth Wilson was barely able to give a description of the rapist. (20)

In the annals of criminal history, the Night Stalker's next crime must rank among the top 10 most insane crimes of all time. Near the end of May, 83-year-old Malvia Keller and her disabled sister Blanche Wolfe, age 80, were discovered beaten in their homes. A few days before, the Night Stalker had entered their house and began viciously beating the two octogenarians with a hammer and sexually assaulted the younger of the two. As a means to let it be known that a Satanist did this, Richard used lipstick to draw a pentagram on the thigh of one of the aged women and also drew a huge pentagram with the blood of one of the victims on the wall behind where the bodies lay comatose. The sisters laid there for two days, and doctors were able to save Wolfe, but her sister Malvia soon died. (21)

On June 27, the Night Stalker went to Arcadia, California and sexually abused a 6-year-old girl. The next day, 32-year-old Patty Higgins was discovered dead with her throat slit. On July 2, a 75-year-old woman was found dead in her ransacked home. Mary Cannon had been severely beaten and her throat was slit. Five days later, Richard murdered Joyce Nelson, a 61-year-old who was beaten with a blunt object. Later that evening, Richard broke into the home of 63-year-old Linda Fortuna and attempted to rape and sodomize her, but he was sexually impotent that night and fled with her valuables, leaving her alive. (22)

Less than two weeks later on July 20, the Night Stalker slipped into the home of Maxon and Lela Kneiling, both in their mid-sixties, and shot them both before mutilating their bodies with a knife. Maxon's head was just about decapitated. Later that evening, Richard broke into the home of Chitat Assawahem, 32, and his wife Sakima, 29. He murdered the man and then sexually abused the woman. He then beat her to a pulp and sodomized the couple's 8-year-old son. (23)

During the first week of August, 1985, Ramirez forced his way into the home of Christopher and Virginia Petersen, ages 38 and 27 respectively. He shot both of them as they lay in bed, but miraculously Christopher got up and chased Richard from the house as he and his wife bled profusely. The couple survived the harsh attack. Two nights later, Richard was much more careful and made sure that his next victim, Ahmed Zia, aged 35, was fully dead from a gunshot wound to the head before he raped his wife, Suu Kyi, age 28. (24)

Highway to Hell

The Night Stalker had all of Southern California terrified and left the police reeling as they looked for a suspect. This serial killer was not one of the usual suspects as

the random nature of his choices to kill was unpredictable and the paltry description made him look like the majority of men in Southern California. The duration between attacks was getting less and less and with multiple random attacks starting to happen several times a week. This only increased public tension and the pressure on the police was huge and constantly mounting. Ramirez would often blast AC/DC's signature song "Highway to Hell" on the tape decks of the cars he stole and drove to his next murder scene. (25)

Richard also seemed to have the Devil's luck as evinced in the following incident recounted by Philip Carlo in his outstanding biography of Ramirez entitled *The Night Stalker* (1996):

As it turned out, the killer couldn't find a home to invade that night. He was angry and frustrated and continued to hunt, even after the sun had come up, something he usually didn't do. In Eagle Rock, he tried to abduct a girl, but she screamed, fought him off and got away. A neighbor in a ground-floor apartment heard her screams, saw what was happening, and dialed 911.

He took off and was racing to the freeway - his sanctuary - when he went through a red light and was spotted by LAPD motorcycle officer John Stravos.

Officer Stravos turned on his siren and gave chase. As the man in the black got on the freeway, he threw a gun and an ounce of pot out the car window, onto a secluded grassy knoll. Officer Stravos did not see this.

Stravos quickly caught up to him and told him to pull over. The moment Stravos had on him was a stolen car, he figured.

Stravos asked him where he was going in such a hurry and demanded his license and registration. He sincerely told Stravos he didn't have his license and registration with him, that he's forgotten his wallet at home.

Stravos made him get out of the car and put his hands on the front hood and searched him, finding nothing.

"Give me your name," Stravos said. "I'll call it in, and if everything is okay, I'll let you go with a ticket."

He gave him a phony name and a downtown address.

Stravos went back to his motorcycle to write up the ticket, and heard the call about an attempted abduction over the police radio. It gave a description of the stolen Toyota and a description of the suspect: "Mexican, black hair, driving a blue Toyota."

Officer Stravos did not realize the guy he pulled over was the suspect involved. However, the killer did, and as Stravos called in the plate number of the stolen Toyota, he made up his mind to run. He couldn't take any chances. If they linked him to what he's done, he knew they'd kill him -- one way or the other, for sure. He wasn't ready to die.

Stravos walked back to him and said, "Hey...you're not that guy killing people in homes, are you?"

"No way man; when are you guys going to catch that mother fucker"

"We'll get him."

"Hope so. I got a wife you know."

"You sure you're not him?"

"Hey, man. It's not me, c'mon here."

Stravos returned to the motorcycle. The killer said a prayer to Satan, drew a pentagram on the hood of the car, and bolted like a jackrabbit. He had long, strong legs and had always been a fast runner. Stravos jumped on his cycle and tried to catch him, but he vaulted over a ten-foot fence, crossed a yard, an alley, and another yard, jumped on a bus and got away.

Stravos went back to the car and searched it. He found a black leather wallet on the floor containing a hundred dollars in cash and an appointment card with a dentist, Dr. Peter Leung, located in downtown Los Angeles; he also found a little black phone book with six telephone numbers. Stravos learned the car was stolen and had it towed to a police lot, where it was left outside in the harsh summer sun. He didn't ask any tech people to dust it for prints, even though the driver was suspected of kidnapping - a major felony.

The man in black's prints were all over the car; he'd never had a chance to wipe them off. They were also on the hood next to the pentagram he had drawn. [pages 83-84]

Where and when the Night Stalker would hit next was impossible to determine and the authorities were at their wit's end. As the Los Angeles police sought to trace any and all leads, Richard Ramirez quietly made his way out of town.

If You're Going to San Francisco...

There has been much speculation and rumor as to why Richard Ramirez fled L.A. and restarted his blood lust in the San Francisco Bay Area. It may be that he merely feared getting caught and sought a fresh geographical area where he could return to his Satanic murder spree. However, there have been many rumors in the Satanic community that Ramirez went to see Anton LaVey, head of the Church of Satan, once again to inform him of his criminal actions. In this version of events, Richard spoke to LaVey who promptly told him to get lost. There is really no way to confirm this as fact and it may just be gossip. Ramirez, as mentioned, drew heavily from Church of Satan literature to fuel his relationship with the Devil. This is not to say that LaVey in any way endorsed the Night Stalker, but it is within the

realm of possibility that Ramirez paid The Black Pope a visit and identified himself as the Night Stalker.

Ramirez went back to his Satanic bloodlust on August 18 when he shot Peter and Barbara Pan in the head after he broke into their house in Lake Merced. Mrs. Pan would survive the attack. The Night Stalker took some lipstick and scrawled the words *Jack the Knife*, which is taken from the lyrics of a Judas Priest song. The police in Northern California quickly determined the Night Stalker had moved north and was now active in the Bay Area. Northern California now faced the terror of this heartless serial killer. (26)

The authorities speculated that the Night Stalker may have killed in the Bay Area earlier on February 20, 1985 when two sisters, Mary and Christina Caldwell, were killed by a knife-wielding intruder in their home on Telegraph Hill. On June 2, 1985, Theodore Wildings was shot in the head while asleep and his girlfriend brutally raped at his Cow Hallow apartment just twenty-four hours after the Night Stalker struck in Los Angeles. (27)

There was widespread panic as it became apparent that the Night Stalker was on the move in California. In San Francisco, Mayor Dianne Feinstein tried to quell fears, claiming a full manhunt was on for the Night Stalker killer. A break came when a flophouse manager in San Francisco's Tenderloin red light district recalled that a man who fit the rough description of the Night Stalker had stayed at his hotel on and off over the past year. The police examined the last room this guest had stayed in and found a pentagram drawn on the bathroom door. The mysterious guest checked out a few hours before the Pan murder took place. Detectives spoke with a known felon who came forward and claimed to have purchased some stolen jewelry from a man who resembled the Night Stalker police sketches. The ring and cuff links this witness produced belonged to the murdered Peter Pan. (28)

The Night Stalker hit again but this time 50 miles south of L.A. In this instance, Richard entered the home of high-tech worker and his girlfriend as they slept and shot the man in the head. Ramirez then raped the woman and beat her to find out where the valuables were located. After the abuse, Richard screamed at the woman, "Swear your love for Satan!" and the woman replied, "I love Satan!" out of fear. The Night Stalker forced her to repeat these diabolical words over and over again. After the intruder left, the woman called the police. A neighbor had jotted down the plate number of a suspicious-looking car he saw in the area several times and turned the information over to the police. (29)

The investigators discovered the car was stolen in L.A. They were able to lift a fingerprint from the vehicle. This print matched one that was taken from the Pan home, and now the police had the name of the Night Stalker - Richard Leyva Ramirez. They moved fast and put out an APB and released the name and photograph of the Night Stalker. This fast police action led to Richard's overdue demise. (30)

About a week later, Ramirez tried to steal a car and a fracas broke out when the owner caught Richard in the act. Some neighbors heard the trouble and came to help. They chased Richard, eventually capturing him, and they immediately

recognized him as the Night Stalker whose picture was on every TV and newspaper in California. The police arrested Ramirez and his satanic killing spree was over. (31)

Trial and Conviction

In October of 1985, the world got its first glimpse at the Night Stalker when Ramirez was arraigned for a variety of charges stemming from murder to rape. Richard drew a pentagram on the palm of his hand and flashed it at the press, shouting, "Hail Satan!" to the crowd. Not only was the Night Stalker a Satanist but he was an unrepentant one which made giving him an adequate defense nearly impossible for his court-appointed lawyer. Not since Charles Manson had a defendant done more to harm his own case than Richard Ramirez. His constant references to Lucifer and his antics before the cameras made him a very difficult client to defend, and he changed lawyers several times during the initial stages of his prosecution. (32)

His defense lawyers delayed trial for four years, claiming the complications surrounding the case made them need more time to formulate a proper defense. The trial finally opened in January of 1989 and Ramirez remained defiant, wearing all black with black sunglasses and generally sat drumming at the table with his fingers and listening to heavy metal music replaying in his mind. During the testimony of some of his victims, Ramirez would gleefully flip through the evidence photos of the grisly murders and seemed to be reliving the morbid events. (33)

A big part of the case against him centered on fingerprints he left behind and the pentagrams he drew at crime scenes and even on his hand and in his prison cell. Much like Charles Manson's trial, some inexplicable events occurred which seemed supernatural, such as the fact that charts kept falling off of easels and people began breaking out in uncontrollable sweats. Zeena LaVey showed up for much of the trial, which makes many people wonder to this day how closely linked Ramirez was to the Church of Satan. Anton LaVey tended to distance himself from Ramirez after the arrest of the Night Stalker. Much like Charles Manson, Ramirez had a cadre of groupies who showed up at the trial donned in black and claiming the Night Stalker should be set free. As in the Manson trial, a person linked to the case was murdered -- in this instance, a juror named Phyllis Singletary was found shot to death in her apartment, a victim of an apparent crime of passion. (34)

Even with all these setbacks, Richard Ramirez was found guilty of all counts and sentenced to die in California's gas chamber on September 20, 1989.

Marriage Without Gold

As Richard sat in a jail cell awaiting death, he became a cult figure, and his weird groupies continued to write and visit him, some with romantic intentions. The occurrence of women befriending and even marrying convicted killers on death row is a strange and unstudied phenomenon. It seems to fly in the face of reason that a free and attractive young woman would actively seek to meet and become romantically involved with a man sentenced to die for grisly crimes. How such a woman's mental dynamics function is fodder for scientific examination. (35)

Even one of the jurors who convicted Ramirez became enamored with the death row Romeo and began to send him letters and eventually visited him at San Quentin's death row. Cynthia Hayden was one of the jurors who voted to hand down the death penalty for the Night Stalker. After her infatuation with the man she sentenced to death intensified, she became a private investigator and is actively aiding Ramirez in his appeal. She hopes to eventually liberate the killer who awaits his day in the infamous green room -- a slang term for San Quentin's gas chamber. (36)

Another woman who fell for Richard was Doreen Lioy, a magazine editor who began writing Richard letters in 1985 just after his arrest. She came to see him and the two fell in love via letters and visits. Doreen also had competition with many other women coming to visit Richard and seeking his affection. One woman even threatened to harm Doreen if she did not leave Richard alone. (37)

However, Richard took to Doreen and proposed to her in 1988. Prison regulations made it impossible for them to wed until 1996. The two tied the knot, but Richard refused to wear a gold wedding ring, claiming Satanists never wear gold because it represents the Christian God. Doreen Lioy Ramirez is a college graduate with an IQ of 152 which cogently demonstrates that intelligence and education are no markers of sanity! (38)

End Notes

- 1) Kurtis, Bill, *American Justice: Richard Ramirez*, A & E Network.
- 2) Bruno, Anthony, *The Night Stalker*, Court TV Crime Library:
http://www.crimelibrary.com/serial_killers/notorious/ramirez/terror_1.html
- 3-6) Interview with Philip Carlo and author 2/16/05.
- 7-8) *Richard Ramirez The Night Stalker*
<http://roswell.fortunecity.com/seance/500/killers/ramirez.html>
- 9) Kurtis documentary.
- 10). *Richard Ramirez The Night Stalker*
<http://roswell.fortunecity.com/seance/500/killers/ramirez.html>
- 11) Carlo 2/16/05.
- 12-24) Bruno.
- 25) Carlo 2/16/05.
- 26-38) Bruno.

5

Say You Love Satan

On July 7, 1984 a seventeen-year-old boy was found hung in his jail cell in the quiet town of Northport, Long Island. He had been arrested just a few weeks earlier for the murder of his close friend who was also seventeen. The case would have gone unreported if the accused had not taken other teenagers on guided tours of the murder scene complete with a visit to the decomposing corpse. In the sick world of satanic crime, a need for recognition is not uncommon. However, for any murderer to offer group tours of his crime scene is rare, and what is even more unique is the fact that the killer in this case did not expect anyone to alert law enforcement of this grisly killing. Such was the demented world of Ricky Kasso who took his own life after being booked for the savage murder of Gary Lauwers. (1)

Acid King of Satanism

There was nothing in Ricky's upbringing that could possibly account for his vicious criminal actions. His father was a respected football coach and his mother a considerate home-maker who did her best to raise Ricky and his four younger sisters. Northport is not what one could call a bastion of crime, like New York City or Chicago. There was, however, a serpent in this scenic town which caused Kasso to butcher his friend -- there was a satanic cult operating at the local high school which Ricky had attended before dropping out because he rejected all forms of earthly authority. The Knights of the Black Circle were an informal group of Satanists who sacrificed animals and held wild sex orgies. Kasso was a fringe member of this group, but he strongly identified with their brand of religion. (2)

Ricky became obsessed with Satanism when he happened upon a copy of Anton LaVey's *Satanic Bible* and became gripped by the notions of superiority and disregard of social norms that emanates from this diabolical guide. In his quest for power, Ricky became a theistic Satanist and believed that the Prince of Darkness was his god. He made no bones about this fact to his small clique of fellow drug dealers. Of course, Ricky's parents soon became suspicious of their teenage son's new religion and were aghast at the huge amounts of drugs he consumed daily. (3) Ricky's problems started very early on as related by one of his schoolmates in a November 22, 1984 *Rolling Stone* article:

I've known Ricky since sixth grade. First time he tripped, in seventh grade, in art class, he'd drawn a dragon on the board and said it started to move. First time Ricky got in trouble was eighth grade. He stole a container of Hi-C from the church. Kinda ironic that he ends up worshiping Satan and starts by stealing from the church.

Drugs became a big part of Kasso's life as he moved into his teen years, and this merged well with his diabolical faith. Ricky became a well-known drug dealer who specialized in illicit hallucinogenic drugs like LSD and Angel Dust and enjoyed living on the fringe of society as opposed to his parents' comfortable middle-class way of life. His parents tried on many occasions to get him to reform by sending him to drug rehab and mental institutions, to no avail. (4)

Illicit drugs bought him women, money, and followers -- an allure that would attract any teenage boy and completely corrupt a dysfunctional adolescent like Ricky. Kasso was a rare case of a person who took heavy doses of psychedelic drugs on a daily basis, which is unusual even for hardcore drug addicts, who claim the disorientation and hallucinations are too overwhelming. In fact, it is extraordinary to take such huge amounts without psychosis setting in, which seems to be the case with Kasso. In his quest to get high, Ricky broke every normal rule of intelligent drug use -- whatever deranged thought he had was his "set" and the greater world was his "setting". A friend noted in the *Rolling Stone* article after the murder:

Ricky took everything just like Jim Morrison. The younger crowd was impressed by what he did. About six months ago, he started going to the South Bronx with a friend of mine. He used to drive in, get dusted and drive back. After two months, they finally crashed my friend's car. They were all dusted out. Rick found other ways to get into the city.

Ricky's parents attempted to secure professional help for the boy, but he was always able to beat the system, as his friends related at his wake:

He told me the way he got out of South Oaks Hospital. He bullshitted. When he went in, they believed he worshiped Satan and shit, and he told the doctors that he was fine, that he was gonna go back to school and doesn't believe in Satan anymore, and he bullshit the doctor so much, they finally believed him ... and they let him go.

His parents put him in some kind of hospital, and he ran away from it. One day, at the train station, I saw him. He dyed his hair so no one could find him. I said, "What's going on?" And he goes, "No way are they gonna lock me up. I'm not crazy." I was like, "I never said you were crazy, but maybe you need help with drugs." He said, "I do not," and then he started yelling... coming closer. I talked my way out of it. I think Ricky stopped living in eighth grade. [Rolling Stone]

Grave Robbers

In his obsession to further merge with Satan, Ricky began to hang out in the local graveyard, which was to become a bizarre obsession over the next few years of his life. He would often bring a few friends who were beginning to admire Ricky's outsider image and also began to adopt Satanism. The boys would get high on Angel Dust and LSD and would sit around chanting hymns to Lucifer as the hard drugs began to take their effect. This obsession with death became more

and more prevalent in Ricky's mind, and his behavior became increasingly macabre. This led to some especially deranged behavior. (5)

As a means to connect with his diabolical deity, Kasso began to dig up graves and examine dead bodies, sometimes collecting skulls and other body parts. This is one of the first offenses for which Ricky was arrested, and he showed no remorse for this strange action. In this instance, Kasso robbed a nineteenth-century grave and removed a skull and hand for a Luciferian rite. Kasso's parents had four daughters to think about, and Ricky's estranged behavior led his desperate father to eventually ban him from the house, fearing his estranged son might harm other family members. This was no easy action but one the Kassos had to take as their wayward Ricky was becoming more and dangerous to him-self and others. Ricky often claimed it was his greatest goal to murder his own mother, and this was not a case of teen angst and frustration -- Ricky was serious. (6) As a friend noted:

There's a power trip in Satanism. It says: Now you can strike back at the people that screwed you up. The doctors said Kasso was anti-social. Wrong. Antisocial means sitting in a corner at a party. Sociopath means robbing graves. [Rolling Stone]

On the whole, most teens who get involved in Satanism are mere dabblers who adopt this anti-social philosophy as a form of teen rebellion. By age twenty, the diabolical ideas and practice are usually long forgotten and young people move on to employment concerns and personal relationships. This was not the case with Ricky Kasso, whose devotion to Lucifer was deep and heartfelt. Critics often mention that Kasso was only a fringe member of the Knights of the Black Circle and that drugs were the ultimate reason he committed such horrible acts. A further examination proves this assertion to be false. It was the Knights of the Black Circle who were fringe Satanists and dabblers who used this demonic faith as a means to attract women for sex. Compared to them, Ricky's faith in the Fallen Angel was genuine and profound. Kasso dedicated his life to the Dark Prince and had no reservations about doing so. Drugs were merely a way of communing with his infernal deity and were part and parcel of his satanic practice and world view. (7)

Kasso claimed that he directly communicated with the Devil himself and often performed rituals to call up the King of Hell. According to friends, Ricky claimed to go off into the woods and meet with Lucifer who would sprout out of the ground in the form of a tree and radiate with infernal energy. This relationship was deep and intense as debased and insane as it seems to the rest of society. Soon Kasso drew his two closet friends into this world of diabolical devotion and expected them to be as dedicated to the infernal realm as he was. This would lead to human sacrifice. (8)

Gary Lauwers and Jimmy Troiano were also high school dropouts who had been Ricky's friends since grade school. Troiano was an assertive boy who, like Kasso, enjoyed hard drugs, women, and the dark world of Satanism. Gary Lauwers was more a follower who, although he partook of drugs and the dark arts, was not as hell bent on Luciferianism as his friends were. The three formed their own coven of Devil worship, which was lived on a daily basis and was not a fringe teenage

fad for them. If anything, Kasso most likely looked down on the Knights of the Black Circle as being mere dilettantes with no true devotion to Lucifer. Those dabblers were not willing to go all the way for the faith and remained within the mainstream of society. Kasso had no use for half measures when it came to service to Satan -- it was an all or nothing proposition as far as he was concerned. Apart from selling drugs to local teens, he really never saw them as being part of his Luciferian world. Only his friends Gary and Jimmy were really worthy of being fully part of his coven and participate in the deeper rites of the Dark Side. Illicit drugs were merely an aspect of his greater world of Satanism. (9)

As a local acquaintance noted in *Rolling Stone*:

If you met Ricky, he was just one of the nicest people you'd ever meet. After he smoked seven packets of dust, we were having a regular conversation. Meanwhile, this other guy who'd smoked with him was in a complete psychosis--making animal movements, karate movements. The police were here, and the policeman says, "You don't step on our toes, we don't step on yours." Ricky would take ten hits of mesc in a night. He would take three; ten minutes later he'd take another three; and two hours later he'd take four more. He'd figured it out in his mind how to take the most without OD-ing. Ricky is the acid king.

They also turned to other forms of occultism, like necromancy (calling up the spirits of the dead) as local teenagers who knew them commented:

When the dust came to town, Ricky and the guys used to go down to the graveyard, and they'd tape themselves tripping on acid and mesc and dust. They thought the devil possessed the tape, and there were all these, you know, different voices.

Ricky and this dude were in my car, and they were like, "We're trying to get this cult going. Going to the library to read up on some books. We want your mother to be the leader of it." See, my mother has these powers. She raises tables. We've talked to Jim Morrison through a table. [Rolling Stone]

The three lived a hard homeless existence and Devil worship, drugs and theft were their only concern. Kasso had connections with organized crime from his drug dealing which also gave him a fence for the stolen goods the three would brazenly seize from homes and automobiles. They got caught on occasion, but the legal system in the 1980s was ill-equipped to deal with such strange young criminals, and most juvenile offenders were merely given probation which never addressed the issues behind youth crime. (10)

Jimmy summed up their philosophy when a friend questioned him about his way of life:

I asked Jimmy what school he went to, and he's like, "I don't need school." I go, "Do you work?" And he goes, "I don't need a job." I say, "What do you do?" He says, "I hang out." Everything is such a quick comeback. I said, "Do you have any future plans" He goes, "We just break the rules." He goes, "People make rules, we break

them.” He broke into houses. He had a good reputation as a burglar. He was at that age. [Rolling Stone]

Kasso’s coven had some great adventures, which made their lifestyle seem appealing. There was the time they stole a credit card and went on a drunken sojourn to Florida. There was the constant partying with local girls who were drawn to their drugs and bad boy image. The constant flow of money and drugs made it seem like the Dark Prince was taking care of his loyal disciples and further bonded them to their nefarious god. Kasso saw illegal drugs as a sort of satanic sacrament which bought him a euphoric kind of infernal mysticism -- a state of mind where Ricky’s Dark Lord would protect him from all the bad things that could happen in this world and bring him the things of the good life. (11)

Constant rituals and chants to Satan accented much of their daily practice. Many nights the three would build a bonfire and get fueled on hallucinogens. Grave robbing afforded them skulls to use in their diabolical ceremonies and animal sacrifice became a big part of their sinister faith. Ricky, Jimmy, and Gary went a pilgrimage to nearby Amityville where they sought to commune with the Devil at a most opportune place, where a series of bizarre murders occurred and reports of ghosts were common. (12)

Amityville Ritual

This, of course, refers to the famous “Amityville Horror” house located at 112 Ocean Avenue, where Robert “Butch” Defeo, Jr. went on a psychotic rampage. Defeo’s life was very similar to Kasso’s and it is worth examining as a means to understand the depths of depravity that fuel teenage rampage. Defeo was an overweight outsider who was bullied at school and went home to an abusive father. The elder Defeo regularly beat his son while at the same time indulging him with large gifts of cash and expensive toys like a \$14,000 speedboat... Drugs became a huge part of Butch’s life and his family unknowingly supplied him with enough cash to fund his growing addiction. Butch became more and more demented as he moved through his teen years. (13)

The young Defeo’s LSD and heroin use got him expelled from his Catholic high school and he was given a “no-show” job at his family’s car dealership. Butch’s major interest was drinking and drugging him-self, and he felt that his father was being too controlling and abusive in his life. On November 14, 1974 Butch Defeo took a shotgun and murdered his entire family -- father mother, two brothers, and two sisters -- while they slept. He later claimed a shadow ghost walked with him as he conducted the murders, but this may have been part of an insanity defense. This was a well-planned murder and Defeo was to come into a fortune with his family now gone. A couple who later moved into the house claim they were haunted by evil spirits and sought to have the house exorcised by a Roman Catholic priest. (14)

Butch Defeo’s actions and the story of haunting became local legend, and Ricky Kasso and his satanic cohorts went to pay homage to the murderer and to the evil

spirits that they believed occupied the house. The three made a sojourn to the abandoned haunted house where the killings occurred and where the troubled spirits allegedly dwelled. This was no ordinary night; it was April 30, 1984, the annual Satanic holiday of *Walpurgisnacht*. Ricky and his friends broke into the empty house and constructed a makeshift altar and held a ritual culminating in their singing of Luciferian hymns. No one can doubt Kasso and the others were legitimate Satanists who gave their allegiance to the infernal realm after this strange ceremony. (15)

Of the three, Gary Lauwers was the most amicable to those outside Kasso's inner core. He certainly took his Satanism seriously and friends recall he wore an inverted cross and would preach from a book on Satanism he carried with him. Friends recall how Gary would always share what he had:

Gary was the type of guy that everybody liked, because he wasn't selfish. I remember he got twenty-five hits of acid, and he just gave them out.

When he robbed that house, he had \$4000 in hard cash, cold cash, and he found two people, and he said, "Hey, you guys wanna go buy some motorcycles?" He bought those two kids cycles, and one for him, and he bought a box, an outrageous tape deck, it was \$300, and went to this girl's house with a gold chain for her. He was going out with her, and they'd broken up. He got there, and she wouldn't go out with him again, and he was just freaking out, and he beat the shit out of the box, on the ground right there. He didn't care. He gave one guy \$500, just, "Have fun tonight." He went to Laces Roller Rink, and he took a thousand dollars, a thousand dollars, and just chucked it in the air, man. [Rolling Stone]

Although Gary Lauwers was in with much more volatile boys, he was very generous, considerate, and even caring of the feelings of others. He was always the wimpy kid eager to please and looking for acceptance. This quality would eventually lead to Gary's undoing as Ricky Kasso had no use for any forms of generosity. (16)

Wrong Drug Deal

Gary made a major mistake when he stole ten bags of Angel Dust (PCP) from Ricky while the two were at a party, and Kasso was too drugged out to notice. As the party rolled on, Gary gave away five bags of the PCP; when Ricky found out; he became enraged and took the remaining five bags back. Being somewhat timid, Lauwers paid Ricky back for the drugs over the next two weeks, but Ricky still took this as a betrayal and badgered Gary about it. It was not so much the money or the drugs that irked Ricky but that one of his fellow Satanists and a partner in crime would steal from him. This broke a bond of trust sealed in arcane rites which paid homage to Lucifer. (17)

For over two months afterward, Gary repaid Ricky in full, but Kasso still felt a strong sense of betrayal and anger toward him. For his part, Lauwers really did not

take Kasso's taunting too seriously as he still spent the majority of his time with Ricky. Over the years, Ricky's rants and threats became a normal part of the day and the fact that the elder boy's wrath was now directed at Gary did not seem unusual. They had been friends for many years; they had taken drugs together, picked up girls, and worshiped the Devil himself. Such a tight friendship would survive most any calamity or perceived betrayal if the participants were normal. Many friends whose relationship is accented by illicit drugs will always have petty squabbles over money. Such tensions rarely ever lead to violence and the two parties normally work out their differences and move on, as the common cause of drug euphoria usually outweighs all other considerations. (18)

Kasso and Lauwers were, however, of a very different and rare breed -- they were hardcore drug users *and Satanists*. Such a relationship was centered on the common cause of glorifying Lucifer, and an act of betrayal against a fellow Devil worshiper carries huge weight. For Gary to steal from another Satanist was as if he stole from the Lord of Darkness himself. The oaths taken in these sorts of rituals involve complete and utter loyalty to Satan and to each other. There are few compromises allowed and Gary broke the cardinal rule of the coven -- he stole from another member. A serious Satanist like Kasso just could not stomach such a state of affairs. (19)

On June 16, 1984 Kasso, Lauwers, Troiano and an acquaintance named Albert Quinones met up in downtown Northport and decided on a day of partying. The mood seemed calm, as Quinones later noted:

Gary already paid him his money back. Everyone was his friend. I mean, Ricky and Gary were both talking a lot, shit like that. The thing that bugs me out, man, is all of them were pushing me, especially Gary and Ricky, to take a hit of mescaline. They were all trippin'. It bugs me out. I didn't want to, but finally I just said, "What the hell!" So, I took a hit. Ricky treated us to donuts at Dunkin' Donuts. To me, Gary was being cool and shit. Then we went up to Aztakea, because they wanted to go to a good tripping area, and they've got a little field where you can trip out. [Rolling Stone]

Say You Love Satan!

As the drugs began to take effect, Ricky's mind began to snap. First he started badgering Gary about the drug rip-off which, even though it was repaid, still irked Kasso and his tone became more heated. Kasso began to beat his old friend and then pulled out a knife. In a fit of rage, Kasso stabbed Lauwers repeatedly and screamed over and over again, "Say you love Satan!" Lauwers response was "No, I love my mother!" Gary collapsed to the ground in a pool of blood and quickly expired. Ricky finished this Satanic human sacrifice by gouging out Gary's eyes, which is a common signature of Satanists. Kasso left the body covered in a pile of leaves. No mention of drugs was ever made in the final deadly scuffle. The three boys quickly fled the crime scene. (20)

Normally, the disappearance of a homeless runaway teenager would cause little alarm. If the police even noticed that Gary was missing, they really would not have bothered to look for him and would appreciate the fact that there was one less troublemaker in town to worry about. Although the local teen community would have noticed Gary missing, they would have lost interest in him very quickly as summer fun and romances would have grabbed their full attention. Lauwers's parents had long given up on their son and were used to his being missing, so they would not have gone to the police to file a missing person's report. Troiano and Quinones certainly did not want to be charged with murder and kept their mouths shut. The memory of Gary Lauwers would have faded from the minds of the inhabitants of Northport in just a few months. (21)

Corpse Tours

The Acid King, however, just could not sit back and allow his most dastardly and evil deed to go unacknowledged. This nefarious act actually intrigued Kasso, and he felt absolutely no remorse for the murder of his close friend who looked up to him. In fact, Ricky was proud of his wicked actions. As noted earlier, Kasso began organizing guided tours of the crime scene for the local teens who were enthralled at the novelty of being personally escorted by a full-fledged murderer for a breakdown of the criminal events. Ricky was drug-addled on psychedelics when he started offering the local kids tours of the murder scene. He would give them a detailed description of the events leading up to the murder and then reenact the actual killing in stunning detail. The group tour would culminate in a viewing of the decomposing Gary Lauwers, which rested in the same spot where Kasso left it after the slaughter! As the weeks of summer rolled on, a great many teenagers went on the murder tour and most kept quiet about it. This is easy to understand as adults must remember the covert world teenagers really live in. A girl who heard about the murder second hand informed the local authorities. (22)

Hang It Up!

The Northport Police detective unit began an investigation and even called out bloodhounds to see if they could locate this supposed decomposing body and determine whether or not they were victims of a prank. The dogs quickly discovered the rotting corpse which, at this juncture, had decomposed into a skeleton with some flesh still dangling from it. It had been over two weeks since the murder and the police knew who to question in this bizarre death. Kasso and Troiano were arrested the next day and were held in jail. Both confessed to the crime, and in his statement Ricky Kasso claimed that a few seconds after murder he heard the screech of a crow which, in his mind, was Satan saying that the murder was a good thing. The purely Satanic elements of the killing came out in his confession. The detectives touted the murder as a drug deal gone wrong, even though they knew Lauwers had paid Kasso the money for the bags of drugs. The police were also aware of the ritualistic nature of the crime yet downplayed it before the media that gathered after word of the arrests hit the newswires. Troiano was put in a monitored cell at the prison because he was seen as a

suicide risk. He was later acquitted of the murder of Gary Lauwers as he convinced the jury that he was a witness to the crime and had no idea Kasso was planning to kill Lauwers. Troiano claimed he wasn't in any position to stop the murder as it erupted so fast. (23)

The Acid King of Satanism Ricky Kasso suffered a far more horrible fate. Ricky was considered a hardcore criminal and was thus put into an adult cellblock that he shared with older and much more vicious criminals for about two months after his arrest. In the prison cell, Ricky began to sober up from years of daily psychedelic drug abuse. No longer did he have the crutch of illicit drugs to fuel his bizarre world and found himself in a prison cell with hardened criminals. For a teenager like Ricky who was always the toughest and craziest person around, being in such a place must have spooked him. Now he was surrounded by men much more vicious than he could ever hope to be. Having confessed, he realized that he may never leave a jail cell for the rest of his life. (24)

Word of the grisly murder soon hit all of the newspapers. As the other prisoners became aware of Kasso's debased crime, they began harassing him. On July 7, Ricky could take no more of any of this. With the encouragement of fellow inmates who chanted, "Hang up! Hang-up!" Ricky took his bed sheets and fashioned a makeshift noose with one end and secured it to an overhead fixture. He climbed to the top of his bunk bed and secured the noose around his neck. With the criminals still chanting, Ricky jumped and plummeted down to meet his god Satan face to face. (25)

End Notes

1-12) Hillier, Scott, *Satan in the Suburbs*, DVD Ventura Distribution 2004.

13-15) *The Real Amityville Horror*: http://www.geocities.com/sayswamp/amityville_conspiracy.htm

25) Breskin, David, *Kids in the Dark*, *Rolling Stone* 11/22/84.

6

The Boy Who Cried Wolf

Many children in their early teens go through a “heavy metal phase” wherein they become absorbed in this world of harsh rhythm, tough lyrics, and sexual freedom. By age sixteen, most teens have abandoned their infatuation with this genre and move on to other musical tastes. Those adolescents who remain in this sub group into their later teens are generally extremely devoted fans who go out of their way to retain a “head banger” lifestyle and reputation when their peers begin to see such a subculture affiliation as being somewhat immature.

The Lure of Heavy Metal

Devotees of heavy metal must tolerate a great deal of rejection and ridicule from both family and close friends. This signifies a strong and heartfelt devotion to this way of life because adherents see value in it even when it means forfeiting lifelong friendships and facing ridicule by peers and even adults. One must never forget to really respect their steadfast dedication to a way of life which is hated by many people around them and attempt to reflect upon what is so appealing about this lifestyle that it causes devotees to remain so deeply loyal to it as they enter adulthood.

To get a sense of how teens who adopt the heavy metal lifestyle are treated, see the film *Dazed and Confused* (1993). Director Richard Linklater depicts how the first wave of head bangers who emerged in the 1970s were constantly harassed and accused of all sorts of deviancy -- so much so that no one person could possibly live up to all of these diverse accusations. This film brings home how badgered these adolescents are by other teens. They suffer great indignities on a daily basis yet still remain loyal to the head banger lifestyle.

We must also respect the deep bonds forged by devotees. Consider that their initial phase of adopting this lifestyle into the later teen years involves a great deal of solitary suffering at the hands of bullies who often come from their own classrooms and even from their own families where they faced rejection by students, teachers and relatives alike. Even law enforcement often unfairly takes a dim view of older teens that have very long hair and wear black t-shirts decorated with diabolical images.

When such teens reach 16, 17 and 18, they begin to come into contact with each other for the first time. They are older and are afforded more free leisure time and often gravitate to alternative retail resources like CD stores and bookshops which

cater to the heavy metal subculture. Every large city has such businesses but they tend to stay under the radar of mainstream commerce.

The Internet affords huge resources for head bangers who seek fellow travelers to network with and this has caused a huge boom in the growth of this underground lifestyle. There are thousands of sites that are dedicated to every aspect of the head banger subculture. One can find fan sites for every group under the sun and information on concerts as well as events for fans to meet and socialize.

Imagine what a good feeling it must be for a teen who suffered that initial phase of solitary rejection, when old friends abandon him or her, and then to find a welcoming group of likeminded fellow travelers. Such bonds must run very deep and peer group acceptance becomes a priority. The commitment formed is long lasting as seen in the tragic fire at the Roadside bar in Rhode Island during January 2004 where over 100 people lost their lives in a blaze set off by pyrotechnics that engulfed the building. These victims were there to see Great White, a 1980s metal band who had a mild degree of success and retained a core following over several decades. Most of the people who perished were older fans in their thirties who never lost their love for this music and the lifestyle. A great many of them traveled quite far to see the group and news reports which covered the tragic events all showed older photos of the victims when they were young heavy metal fans who were much more decked out with long hair and black clothing. Even though they dressed more conservatively and held down respectable jobs, they still returned to this music as they entered middle age.

The deep bonds of friendship formed among members of the heavy metal subculture must be respected because they developed after a period of solitary suffering which acted as a sort of initiation rite that they all shared. The extremist faction of heavy metal devotees constitutes a very potent subculture and often dilettantes or fringe members simply are not tolerated. This is a hardcore philosophy of life with militant adherents and this must be constantly kept in mind when reviewing the case of Varg Vikernes and his strange cohorts.

Morbid Tourists

The Norwegian news service *Aftenposten* (August 5, 2004) reported that young people from around Europe were making pilgrimages to Fantoft in Bergen, Norway to visit a restored church in the center of the city. These young adults did not come to attend services or pray but rather to pay homage to a man who burnt down the original structure, which was Norway's oldest wooden (stave) church. As can be imagined, the local people are leery of mounting crowds of tourist who come like Muslims to Mecca to honor a Norwegian inmate who is serving 21 years for arson, murder, grave robbing, and a host of other crimes which make it seem unlikely that this convict will be liberated from his jail cell any time soon.

What upsets local people is the fact that many of these new tourists actually wear t-shirts which bear a photographic image of the ruins of the old church and dress and act just like the arsonist who robbed them of a national treasure. Some even

ask directions to the prison where their hero is incarcerated hoping to get a chance to meet their nefarious role model. A Canadian film team haunted the city while producing a documentary about the church burning and the strange subculture that gave rise to this crime which, in recent years, has gained worldwide popularity.

The nexus of all this activity centers around Varg Vikernes, whose 1992 trial bought international attention to this normally quiet Norwegian region and caused a cult to emerge which glorifies the criminal behavior of this clearly insane individual. Vikernes's background and the youth subculture he embraced as a teenager offer a look into a dark world of Satanism, Fascism and the hard rhythms of Heavy Metal music which lead to a wave of murder, suicide, and arson that shook the very heart of Norway.

From Kristian to Wolfman

Varg Vikernes was born Kristian Vikernes on February 11, 1973 just outside of Bergen, Norway. His childhood, from all accounts, was normal enough and he led the reserved life of a Scandinavian schoolboy. Quite early on Kristian became enamored with heavy metal music and enjoyed the glaring sounds of groups who were on the harder edge of rock and roll. This eventually led him to the dark world of black metal. (1)

The origins of black metal music can be traced to the louder forms of rock music that emerged in the 1970s. Such bands as AC/DC, Motorhead, Iron Maiden, Alice Cooper and Kiss spewed a loud and fast rhythm with occult and satanic oriented lyrics. Black metal music emerged as a unique form in the early 1980s with the bands like Mercyful Fate whose founder, King Diamond, was a practicing Satanist who would wear white face paint for concerts and would blast out screeching tunes with anti-Christian lyrics. The British band Venom and the Swedish group Bathory formed during the 80s and likewise offered pro-Satanism/anti-Christian music. (2)

A plethora of black metal bands emerged in Norway in the mid-1980s and drew their inspiration from earlier heavy metal bands. The Norwegian version of black metal incorporated Satanism, neo-Nazism, anti-Christian sentiments, Norse mythology, and contemporary fantasy literature to develop a specific worldview. This black metal paradigm proffered violent suggestions and a harsh, uncompromising hatred of the Judeo-Christian Tradition. This is most apparent in the band Mayhem, who was founded in 1984 by Oystein Aarseth who changed his name to Euronymous (Lord of Death). Mayhem members opened a record store called Hell, which sold black metal records and related products and also branched out into recording and producing. They marketed CDs for the newly emerging bands like Satanal, Immortal and Dark Throne. These groups all wore pallid face paint and ranted out lyrics which called for a new Satanic age of mayhem and destruction. (3)

Kristian Vikernes was a teen skinhead and neo-Nazi who soon converted to the black metal scene and belonged to several musical acts before forming Burzum. Vikernes performed under the name of Count Grishnackh, a character from a Tolkein novel. As a means to toss away all vestiges of Christianity, Vikernes changed his first name to Varg -- the Norwegian word for wolf. In effect, Vikernes identified himself with the ancient Nordic Wolf God and even began to howl and growl like the wild deadly beast in his musical act. Vikernes was literally "the boy who cried wolf" in that he barked and howled like a real wolf. This identification with this wolf deity would lead to bloodshed as it did with the boy in Aesop's fable. However, unlike the boy in the fable, Varg would take on the role of the bloodthirsty wolf and would kill. (4)

There was a strong bonding between Varg and Euronymous, and the two introduced a Satanic cult into the Norwegian black metal scene. Much like Ricky Kasso and his cult, these two began to rob graves for remains to use in Luciferian ceremonies. Their major goal was to introduce a harsh brand of Satanism that was meant to evoke violent acts against Christianity. This belief found expression on June 6, 1992 when Varg and Euronymous took it upon themselves to raze the old wooden (stave) church in Fantoft, one of Norway's oldest structures dating from the twelfth century. The duo did not stop there -- over the next year they would set fire to another seven stave churches. They were hoping to start a trend and spark a war against Christians with their fans taking up their violent cause. (5)

Euronymous had second thoughts about the whole violent scheme and Varg took this as a betrayal and murdered his friend in 1993. He stabbed his mentor to death over a recording contract dispute. The Norwegian authorities were somewhat dumbstruck in absorbing what had taken place in their normally peaceful nation. Young Norwegians had never really risen up, even during the 1960s when youth turbulence overtook most of the other European nations. Nor did the authorities even realize that there was a harsh Devil worshipping cult in their midst, thinking that black metal was just another music fad. Varg Vikernes was convicted for a variety of violent crimes and is currently serving a 21-year sentence for arson, manslaughter, grave robbing, and treason in Norway. (6)

Aftenposten (October 27, 2003) reported that unbeknownst to many, Vikernes was being allowed to serve his prison term in a so-called "open" penitentiary in Toensberg, a low-security facility where Vikernes was allowed a certain amount of freedom. He was granted full leave from 7am to midnight. He failed to return, however, and police immediately launched a search.

A few days later, a family of three driving through the valley known as Numedal in Buskerud County reported being flagged down by a pedestrian. When they stopped to assist him, the pedestrian believed to be Vikernes allegedly threatened them with a pistol and hijacked their car.

The car was ultimately spotted around by an unmarked police patrol in Romerike, north of Oslo. Believing Vikernes to be armed, police responded with five police cars and armed officers.

Vikernes was captured with an AG-3 assault rifle, 700 rounds of ammunition, a number of smaller weapons, a handheld GPS system, communications systems, a PC, military uniforms, a bullet proof vest, and camouflage clothes. He received an additional sentence of 14 months for the incident -- somewhat less than the 22 months wanted at the trial -- and was moved to a maximum-security prison in Trondheim. He has since been moved again, this time to Tromsø Prison. How the government of Norway could have let this crackpot out of jail even for a few hours is beyond reason.

American Howlers

Neo-Nazis in the United States have recently embraced Varg's Fascist teachings. This is most apparent in the work of writer/musician Michael Moynihan of the band Blood Axis. Born in Massachusetts in 1969, Moynihan has had a varied career within the extremist right wing. Moynihan began his political activities as a Nazi skinhead in the one man band Coup De Grace in Boston's Kenmore Square and Cambridge's Harvard Square, where he sought Fascist recruits from members of the local punk rock scene. Soon he moved to the West Coast where Moynihan became a priest in Anton LaVey's Church of Satan. In 1989, the youthful Bostonian joined forces with the San Francisco-based Abraxas Foundation, which he described as an "occultist-fascist think tank". (7)

During this period, he joined Boyd Rice's musical group, NON. After working for several years as a NON member, Moynihan had a falling out with Rice and the two men bitterly parted ways. Part of this break came with Rice's ultimate rejection of Paganism -- a belief system dear to Moynihan's heart. Moynihan went on to form Blood Axis -- which is merely a cheap rip-off of NON -- and began promoting Varg's ideas, and those of Fascist thinker Julius Evola. (8)

Moynihan clearly became tired with Rice's evasiveness when it came to Fascist commitment. In a *Momentum* interview, he groaned:

I'm sick of people saying they're "not political," as I think this is a cop-out...If you're going to espouse "fascist" ideas, then I believe you have to accept some of the responsibility for their application in the real world; otherwise what is the point of espousing them in the first place?... Terms which are bandied about like "occult fascism" don't have any tangible meaning as far as I can tell, though they sound impressive. (9)

Yet Moynihan often denies being a neo-Nazi or a Fascist of any kind, insisting he is merely an entertainer and that his politics are anarchistic in nature. However, when one closely examines Moynihan's work, a clear and distinct Fascist and even neo-Nazi ideology emerges. Moynihan is best known to the general public as the author of *Lords of Chaos: The Bloody Rise of the Satanic Metal Underground* (Feral House: 1999). This study, co-authored with Norwegian writer, Didrik Soderlind, examines the development of the black metal music youth subculture, especially in Norway. As mentioned, this counter-cultural group combines neo-Nazism

with Satanic ritual religion and the blaring sounds of heavy metal music to form a distinct philosophy of life which devotees have dubbed “black metal”. (10)

This tome won the Firecracker Alternative Book Award in 1999 and received critical acclaim from a variety of quarters including an endorsement from the *Denver Post*, a rave review from scholar Jeffery Kaplan and praise from radio evangelist Bob Larson. All reviewers contended that Moynihan's research was solid and the book was extremely well-written. However, something very nefarious surfaces when one examines Moynihan's central thesis contained in Chapter 9 of the work. Moynihan and Soderlin borrowed a concept from biology called *atavism*, which denotes the reappearance of a physical trait that existed in a species' remote ancestors. For example, there are humans who sometimes are born with simian tails and fangs. (11)

In *Lords of Chaos*, the authors contend that atavism has a spiritual and psychological component, namely, the emergence of unruly old Norse gods into the minds and bodies of black metalists. In Moynihan's reckoning, such recently reported occurrences of Satanic metalists committing acts of destruction and violence can be attributed to the integration of Norse deities into individual neo-Nazi/Satanists. This process is catalyzed by a combination of ritual Satanism, Fascist indoctrination, and the harsh rhythms of black metal music. (12)

Sometimes this dark worldview leads to harsher forms of criminal activity, as in the case of Varg Vikernes. The authors contend that Vikernes's violent actions are the result of psycho/spiritual/biological atavism, in which the pagan Norse wolf god emerged within him and conducted these evil acts. Varg, one must recall, is the Norwegian word for wolf -- a name Vikernes adopted -- and thus the Norse wolf god took possession of Vikernes via resurgent atavism. For the *Lords of Chaos*, Varg Vikernes is innocent of any crimes -- it was Varg, the metaphysical Norse wolf god, who committed those heinous acts. In any case, neither of these two Vargs will be released from prison in the near future. (13)

Vikernes has spent his prison time producing black metal music CDs in which he claims Varg the Wolf God possesses him and actually does the singing and playing. Sometimes he identifies himself as Odin. He has a fairly large following, as hard as that is to believe. His album *Burzum* features a burning church on its cover -- remember that one of the many crimes Vikernes was imprisoned for was church arson. However, his defense for this offense was possession by the Wolf God Varg. (14)

Other criminal black metal bands Moynihan covers in his book include Norway's Belfagor and the Swedish Satanic band Nefandus, who attacked a black man in a self-described “nigger hunt”; Bard Eithun (“Faust”) from the Norwegian group Emperor, who murdered a gay man who allegedly tried to seduce him; and Jon Nodveidt from the Swedish group Dissection, who slaughtered an Algerian immigrant. Moynihan even dedicates an entire chapter to an obscure two-man German band called Absurd, who coldly executed a fellow high school student.

(15) There may be an even darker reason that Moynihan supports church arsonists and murderers, according to journalist Kevin Coogan:

He [Moynihan] was also suspected of setting fire to a manger scene on the Cambridge Commons, just across from Harvard University, in 1987. A note left by the firebug at the smoky scene the day after Christmas asked: "How many more fires before you realize your gods are dead? DEAD!" (16)

Moynihan further states the entire Third Reich was a manifestation of the ancient Norse god Wotan in the German masses. Germany became involuntarily possessed by the archetypes of the gods in question due to atavism -- a theory he borrows in part from Carl Jung. In his chapter on atavism, Moynihan seems almost sympathetic with the violence generated by atavistic possession. This is how he explains neo-Nazi terrorism in that he sees resurgent atavism as being a perfectly normal and natural occurrence. (17)

If Moynihan's racial violence theory were not bad enough, he has also published the writings of James N. Mason -- a neo-Nazi ideologue who was an original member of George Lincoln Rockwell's American Nazi Party. In 1992, Moynihan, under his Storm publishing imprint, released a complete anthology of Mason's articles from the Fascist magazine, *Siege*, which included a piece that called for terrorist violence on the Jewish power structure of the United States. Tom Metzger, director of the neo-Nazi group, White Aryan Resistance, has also endorsed this book on national TV in the United States. Mason is admittedly a lesser figure in the American radical right and few serious neo-Nazis follow his ideas, but any promotion of terrorist acts in our time can become dangerous. One need only think of Timothy McVeigh's literal interpretation of William Pierce's *The Turner Diaries*, which led to his bombing of the Oklahoma City Federal Building, to see the consequences of promoting the idea of neo-Nazi terrorist acts among the general public. James N. Mason was sent to prison for assaulting a racially mixed couple not long after Moynihan's publication of his essays. Even after this conviction for racist violence, Moynihan continues to sell Mason's essays on the Blood Axis commercial site. (18)

In his effort to promote Fascism, Moynihan also paid homage to white racist "lone wolf" assassins like Mason's former ANP colleague Joseph Franklin, who specialized in shooting interracial couples ("race traitors"); and James Huberty, who massacred a largely Hispanic clientele at a McDonald's restaurant in San Diego. Mason felt that the lone wolves were merely expressing healthy "Viking berserker rage" against "Big Brother". He especially liked the fact that, since they acted alone, these lone wolves were very difficult to catch. *Siege* also glorified Charles Manson. Mason even created a Manson-inspired successor group to The Family called The Universal Order in an effort to transcend the traditional left-right political spectrum. (19)

Moynihan's musical career involves his use of Nazi-like outfits and Fascist symbols in his Blood Axis concerts. For one who claims to be an anarchist, Moynihan does not hesitate to employ National Socialist type flags and giving a version of the Nazi salute at all of his shows. Even if Moynihan considers this to be merely an exercise in jest, many of his young and impressionable followers will none-the-less take it the wrong way and see clear Fascist connotations in these concerts. (20)

Although he consistently denies being a neo-Nazi, Moynihan has also made some statements that can be taken as confirming his Fascist sympathies. For example, Moynihan stated in a 1998 interview, "I have no problem with being called a Fascist. If Fascism will restore some sense of order, discipline and responsibility to the world, I am all for it." [*Compulsion* #3 1998]. In a 1995 *Esoterra* [#5] interview Moynihan describes his musical collaboration with Thomas Thorn of the Electric Hellfire Club in the following manner: "The concert itself was extremely noisy and fascist. Quite a few suspicious types showed up, because the propaganda for the show looked incredibly Fascist. We were both skinheads at the time." When asked what he thought of the atrocities conducted by the Third Reich, Moynihan stated, "It's not as if I'd be upset to find out the Nazis did commit every atrocity that's been ascribed to them -- I'd prefer if it were true." And when asked if he would like to gas Blacks and Jews, Moynihan responded, "If I were given the opportunity to start up the next holocaust, I would definitely have far more lenient entrance requirements than the Nazis did." [*No Longer a Fan Zine*].

It is apparent that Moynihan seeks to be possessed by the spirits of Viking gods via *resurgent atavism*, as is demonstrated in a review of a Blood Axis concert which appears on the Dagobert's Revenge web page:

Finally, in "Reign I forever", another exceptional track, Michael Moynihan takes on the persona of Thor, announcing that "This is my hammer... there are my gauntlets... This is my girdle. Whenever I brace it, strength is revealed." (I almost expected him to say, "Here is my handle, here is my spout." But of course that's a different song entirely.)

Moynihan commented on his choice of the name Blood Axis for his musical act:

Blood can be seen as LIFE, and at the same time it can be equated to DEATH. It is essential to violence in almost all instances. It has powerful sexual connotations. It is the key fluid of history...[Axis]. highlights the genetic aspect of blood, bound together in the will of a people or race. It describes allies of mind and blood, mobilized for total warfare. It also reiterates the pivotal nature of blood in human existence, both personal and world-historic. (21)

Moynihan's obsession with blood has taken on a weird manifestation -- vampirism. According to some reports, Moynihan's blood fetish included drinking blood in weird, arcane rituals. (22)

The Italian Fascist thinker Baron Julius Evola (1898-1974) has dominated much of Moynihan's time recently. Evola developed Italy's official state policy, concerning the supremacy of the Nordic race over all other peoples and worked for Hitler's SS during the closing years of World War Two. Moynihan edited the Baron's *Men Among the Ruins* [Inner Traditions: 2001]. This book contains Evola's post-War reflections and heartless lamentations concerning the state of the West after the fall of his beloved Italian and German Fascist states. In his series of essays, Evola bemoans the development of democracy in Europe, the rise of corporations as economic generators and calls for a United Europe to deflect the effects of American Capitalism and Russian Communism. Moynihan also produced a CD

that featured a musical salute to Evola and named it after the Baron's famous essay "Riding the Tiger". It was in this essay that Evola called for "active nihilism" (aka terrorism) against the State after the fall of Fascism in Europe.

Under the influence of both Evola and the Asatru Alliance (a neo-pagan sect which seeks to restore Norse religion combined with racist doctrines) Moynihan recently founded a journal entitled *Tyr* (after the pre-Christian German sky god) which is billed as a journal of myth, culture and tradition. Its first issue features an article on Evola and contains other pieces that focus on the revival of Pagan Norse religion.

Moynihan's cohort in promoting Evola as a worthwhile political theorist is Colgate University professor of music and occult historian Joscelyn Godwin. Godwin has been promoting Evola's ideas for years now in various occult journals like *Gnosis* and has written positive introductions to several of Evola's recently translated American editions, which were edited by Moynihan. Although he openly denies being a Fascist, it is hard to believe that Godwin is not a neo-Nazi sympathizer as he has stated that aspects of Evola's work are of great value. Evola's corpus cannot be taken piecemeal, as Godwin must know. Consequently, it is hard to understand how and why such an astute and highly cultured Englishman like Godwin could promote Evola's theories without subscribing to the Baron's dark and sinister vision.

Godwin even has gone as far as to publish a pro-Evola article in the inaugural issue of Moynihan's Fascist/Pagan journal, *Tyr*. It is somewhat startling and upsetting that a full professor of Godwin's high academic standing would write for such a clearly Fascist publication run by a neo-Nazi who started out as a skinhead on the mean streets of Greater Boston. Why Colgate University tolerates Godwin's Fascist work is a great enigma. Godwin even has the nerve to post a reference to his pro-Evola *Tyr* article on his official Colgate University web site. Why do the Jews at Colgate tolerate such an overt Fascist as Godwin? Why have they not protested the presence of this sick man on their campus?

What advice does Godwin offer those who do not share his enthusiasm for Evola? What can Godwin offer the brave US and British WWII veterans, some of whom were wounded by Evolian recruited SS men, who are becoming enraged that he is openly promoting Evola as a great thinker? What does he have to say to the families of US and Russian servicemen who were killed in the final days of the Second World War by the non-German SS troops who Evola recruited? I will let Godwin speak for himself:

Those who react to Evola's text only on an emotional level are, unfortunately, beyond such assistance; it would be better for them to save their blood pressure by not reading him at all. (23)

Having been at Colgate for so long and having produced masterful academic works on musicology and esotericism, perhaps no one at the university has bothered to check the political nature of Godwin's most recent publication. If the academic deans of Colgate ever do bother to check on Godwin's work, they may

notice that their esteemed professor of music has quietly become a neo-Nazi ideologue.

When one looks at Godwin's past actions, one may be able to explain his strange alliance with Moynihan. His obsession with such things as occultism, paganism, and neo-Fascism go back a long way. His article in *Tyr*, with Varg the Norse Wolf God on the cover, is nothing new in Godwin's corpus. In the same year as Moynihan's birth and long before Vikernes was born, Godwin was experiencing a form of *resurgent atavism* and seems to have been possessed by the metaphysical Wolf God Varg. Like Vikernes, Godwin's encounter with the Viking Wolf God Varg eventually led to musical expression as evinced in a 1969 newspaper clipping from Cornell University. Godwin can be seen wearing fake Wolfman fangs and jet black sunglasses in an advertisement for a Wolfman song and dance routine he performed for Cornell's music department. (24)

Even if it is not a case of *resurgent atavism*, it is a very, very strange coincidence that Godwin was involved in this sort of "Wolfman" performance art as far back as 1969. It appears that Dr. Godwin is the granddaddy of Wolfman black metal music. Perhaps after his retirement from Colgate Godwin will resurrect this act and join Moynihan on one of his Blood Axis concert tours or, perhaps, join forces with Vikernes and record a Wolfman duet!

The Rise and Growth of the Black Metal Underground

The black metal underground -- which combines Satanism, neo-Nazis and Norse religion -- is on the rise and is extremely popular with thousands of fans in Scandinavia, Germany, Austria, Great Britain, South America, and the United States. Such music groups as Bathory, Possessed, Slayer, Blood Axis, NON, Sodom, Enslaved, Moonfrog and Sol Invictus have young and eager devotees.

This movement has allied itself with white-power music promoters who stem out of Resistance Records run by the National Alliance (America's premier neo-Nazi group). This fusion of black metal and the neo-Nazi movement actually promotes the growth of both factions. This combined movement operates primarily on the World Wide Web and offers access to commercial websites which sell CDs, posters, stickers, leaflets, clothing, stationary and a variety of other products. These black metal websites also promote concerts, meetings, and ideological articles, all which seek to unify the black metal underground and its ultimate war against Christians and anyone else who opposes their neo-Nazi agenda.

With this growth and organization, Western countries can only expect to see more attacks like Varg committed in 1993. The fact that the first church he burnt down has become a black metal Mecca now visited daily by black metal fans from all around Europe and the United States is frightening. It is only a matter of time before more destruction and murder is undertaken by the more disturbed segment of the black metal movement. The only logical consequence of following this lifestyle is the destruction of Christian churches and, eventually, violence and

murder against other human beings. The people of Norway are correct in being leery and alarmed at the growth of this most disturbing youth movement.

End Notes

1-8) Goodricke-Clarke, Nicolas, *The Black Sun*, NYU Press 2002 pp. 207-215.

2) Moynihan quoted in Coogan, Kevin, *HITLIST* February/March 1999, Vol. 1, # 1 Berkeley CA,

3-14) Marrow Charles, *Soundtracks to the White Revolution*, Center for New Community Press, 1999 pages 68-70.

15) Coogan: 1999.

16) Moynihan quoted in Coogan 1999.

17) Marrow: 69.

18) Marrow p. 63 & Goodricke-Clarke p. 207.

19) Coogan: 1999.

20) Marrow: 1999.

21-22) Coogan: 1999.

23) Godwin, J, Forward to *Men Among the Ruins by Julius Evola*, Inner Traditions 2002, page ix.

24) http://www.mothersmallard.cornell.edu/photos/moogdays/jocylyn_wolfman.html

7

Necrophilia in Suburbia

It was every parent's nightmare. In the early hours of July 22, 1995, David and Lianne Pahler awoke to discover that their 15-year-old daughter, Elyse, was missing and had not slept in her bed the night before. The Pahlers began frantically calling Elyse's closest friends for information as to the whereabouts of their beautiful blonde-haired, blue-eyed teenage daughter. As the day wore on, no one they called claimed to know anything about where she might have gone and the police claimed Elyse most likely ran away and would turn up in a few days. The Pahlers, however, began to think the worst because their daughter expressed no dissatisfaction with her home life and took an active interest in family matters and even looked forward to moving to a new town. Although Arroyo, California, was a quiet and peaceful city, Elyse had become somewhat bored with the local social atmosphere and was enthusiastic about a change of scenery. The last thing the Pahlers recalled hearing from their daughter before she disappeared further cemented their contention that Elyse was not a runaway. She called to her parents before retiring for the night and told them, "I love you and I'm going to bed." (1)

Cool Chick

Elyse Marie Pahler was born on April 24, 1980 in Templeton, California to Mr. and Mrs. David and Lianne Pahler. She was the oldest in a family of four siblings with a brother Ryan and two sisters, Jenilee and Kristina. Elyse was a natural beauty and an outgoing personality who shined at the grammar school she attended in Templeton until her family moved to Arroyo Grande in 1989. Lianne home schooled her bright daughter for two years, until she entered Paulding Middle School. It was in this new school that Elyse ran into some trouble.

At an early age, Elyse demonstrated an adventurous and Devil-may-care attitude and was truly a free spirit. This sense of exploration and carefree attitude led her to try alcohol and marijuana when it was offered to her by some male classmates, and she became inebriated at school. The teachers caught on to Elyse's condition and called her parents to fetch her, suspending her from school for five days. The Pahlers acted quickly and sent their eldest daughter for substance abuse counseling, hoping to avert problems in the future. For her part, Elyse saw all of this as an overreaction to what she considered to be a natural attraction to mind-altering drugs. (2)

After entering Arroyo Grande High School at age 15, Elyse excelled at academic pursuits and was an accomplished soccer player. Her two best friends were Shannon Plotner and Angel Katyrni. The three shared all of the adventures of giddy teenage girls and talked mostly about boys, music, and school gossip. The group became Tom Cruise fanatics and saw *Interview with the Vampire* five times and shrieked at the screen each time a scary moment popped up on the screen.

The handsome Cruise played a seductive and even sexy vampire, and the three frivolous teens were both horrified and awestruck by the performance. Her emotive reaction to this horror film was a precursor to real-life terror which she would soon experience.

Unlike Shannon and Angel, Elyse was much more forward and experimental with boys and drugs. She was adept at hiding things from her parents and enjoyed the privacy of an entire section of their large house that buffered her from parental prying eyes. It was not beyond her to sneak out with older boys and share illicit drugs and affections. However, from all accounts, Elyse was still a virgin throughout her freshman year. (3)

Eventually, Elyse's parents discovered she was sneaking out and reacted to this by trying to reason with her. Her parents never understood why Elyse was such a wild child, as she normally was clear-headed and considerate of the feelings and concerns of others. Other aspects of Elyse's life were going extremely well. She enjoyed high grades and athletic prowess, so her parents saw no cause for unwarranted alarm. In this regard, the Pahlers believed that their daughter would outgrow this rebellious streak and hoped that their planned move to a new town would give Elyse a fresh start.

However, Elyse's good looks and outgoing personality made her a magnet for teenage boys. Not only was she smart and athletic, Elyse was considered a "cool chick" who loved to share marijuana with older boys who would provide it. Having a tight schedule, this sometimes meant that Elyse would have to sneak out of the house for these drug-related meetings. Even though her parents caught her twice, Elyse was still willing to sneak out and receive free drugs from boys who were willing to furnish her with them. This alarmed her friends, Shannon and Angel, who saw all of this as risky, fearing that Elyse might be raped by one of these boys. (4)

Hatred

Four boys who noticed the pretty Elyse Pahler were fellow students at Arroyo Grande High School. Joe Fiorella, Jacob Delashmutt, Travis Williams, and Royce Casey were local Death Metal head bangers who flirted with the darker side of life. As a means to avoid what they saw as a drab existence in a boring region, the four would sniff glue, snort speed, drink, and smoke marijuana. They were also fascinated by Satanism, which they saw as the logical spiritual system to follow that was in concert with the music they listened to. The boys were mesmerized by the band Slayer, whose harsh rhythms went well with their wild drug lifestyle. The lyrics of this band's songs suggested practicing such uncommon things as Devil worship, ritual sacrifice, and necrophilia -- themes which all of these teenagers began to take very seriously.

At school, other friends noticed that Fiorella and his group started using constant references to Slayer lyrics in their everyday conversation. They would refer to a pretty girl as a Satan witch or an unusual situation as a cool sacrifice. The four slowly sank into a closed world wherein they could only really communicate with

each other with via Slayer songs as the new vocabulary of what was evolving into a Satanic cult. They were so enamored with Slayer that they formed a copycat musical group which they called "Hatred" and planned to accent their music with the glorification of Satan. (5)

At night the pack of boys would meet up at Fiorella's house, take drugs, and stay up to dawn listening to Slayer albums and other similar bands. They would also discuss the merits of Devil worship and the terrestrial power such devotion could bring here and now. The promotional material for Slayer's *Divine Intervention* album included a collection of photos of Satanists who had died for the cause. Another photo showed the arm of a young man who had the word Slayer carved into it complete with dripping blood. Their 1985 record *Hell Awaits* included a song with the lyrics, "*Virgin child now drained of life, your soul cannot be free.*" The subject of an actual virgin sacrifice came into their conversation quite often, so much so that they mentioned it to others outside their small circle.

Although he was the youngest member of Hatred, Joe Fiorella was the undisputed leader of the group. The cherub-faced youth amassed a huge collection of occult books and magazines and enjoyed an encyclopedic understanding of Satanism. In fact, his personal library lined an entire wall of his bedroom, which he had painted jet black. In this regard, the others were merely following Fiorella's nefarious lead as he was well versed in the Dark Arts. He also became an expert on the Satanist Aleister Crowley and on several occasions performed rituals devised by The Great Beast 666, as Crowley enjoyed being called. One of these ceremonies involved crucifying a frog in the same manner as Jesus and then cooking and consuming the murdered reptile. Fiorella repeated this bizarre rite several times and confirmed to the others that it imparted great spiritual power. (6)

Fiorella and the other members of Hatred also combed the newly emerging World Wide Web, which exploded with information about Satanism, Devil worshipping groups, Satanic chat rooms, and other diabolical Internet networks. The boys naturally gravitated to the official Church of Satan website that was set up by Anton LaVey. Fiorella and Delashmutt paid \$100 each to become card-carrying members and priests of the Church of Satan. The Church sent them a questionnaire to fill out and then they were given full access to the resources of this diabolical organization. (7) They also sought membership in a group called Maledicta -- a publishing house that featured the following chilling quote from Anton LaVey on its homepage:

With heart and hand I pledge to you while I load my gun again, you will never be forgotten or the enemy forgiven, my good comrade. (8)

The boys special-ordered copies of LaVey's *Satanic Bible* and the *Satanic Rituals* so each of them would have first hand knowledge of the diabolic arts. They ordered a ritual knife from Maledicta over the Internet. The sales page had the following pitch: "Maledicta is pleased to bring you a collection of knives which will make any ritual a truly diabolical event." (9) This Church of Satan affiliated company also included the following caveat on its sales page:

Note: We in no way condone illegal activity, and it is your responsibility to check local laws and regulations before ordering knives. You must be eighteen to purchase items on this page. (10)

All members of Hatred made use of the Internet bulletin boards, chat rooms, and web pages which focused on glorifying Lucifer. Human sacrifice did not get much attention in the early days of the World Wide Web. In fact, most sites that came up in the mid-nineties denied the existence of Satanic Ritual Abuse and human ritual murder. A case in point is the Ontario Center of Religious Tolerance which had an early presence on the web and sought to debunk all forms of Satanic crime as being an urban legend. The myth of ritual human sacrifice was, in their reckoning, perpetuated by a few writers, police officials, and psychologists all of whom had vested interests in keeping the false notion of a Satanic conspiracy alive and well.

Fiorella and Delashmutt began posting false stories to their fellow Internet Satanists about having performed human sacrifices. Their elaborate fantasies described detailed ritual murders wherein virgins were butchered in bizarre Luciferian ceremonies. At this juncture, their grip on reality began to fail them, and they were at times uncertain as to whether or not they had actually killed victims in occult rites. They were also compelled by a strong and urgent desire to actually kill a virgin. As hazy as their drug-addled minds were at the time, they were cognizant enough to plot the ritual murder of an actual female. (11)

When they were not surfing the net, Hatred could be found hanging out in a huge abandoned drainage pipe called "the Pipe of Death" because a boy had allegedly fallen to his death while walking on top of the secluded structure a few years earlier. This remote setting, combined with massive amounts of drug intake, caused the band of friends to move further and further away from reality. In their hideaway they became more and more dependent on amphetamines -- a drug which has been linked to psychosis and violent activity. Daily snorting of this hard drug, combined with marijuana, caused them to fade into a sort of drug haze yet gave them the nervous energy to keep focused on their diabolical religion and their now obsessive desire to ritually immolate a female virgin.

High school mattered little to them, and they simply stopped showing up. The older members had stopped attending school while the younger members were *de facto* dropouts, as they did not participate in any academic or social activity in the Arroyo Grande school system. Nor did the authorities particularly care about truants as it merely amounted to kids they no longer had to deal with. So long as they broke no laws, the Arroyo Grande police had no time to track down or deal with truants like Fiorella. Consequently, the boys were left to their own devices and their own delusions. Such a policy would soon come back to haunt the sheriff's office of this fairly quiet county. (12)

During their drug-fueled sessions at the Pipe of Death, Hatred began to plan the actual murder of a virgin. Jacob Delashmutt was the most outgoing and friendly of the group so it fell on him to recruit the hapless victim who would serve as their ticket to Hell. For unclear reasons, they decided that only a blonde-haired, blue-

eyed virgin would satisfy them in this macabre ritual of death. In this regard, Delashmutt began inviting local girls who fit their criteria to come party with Hatred at the Pipe of Death. His efforts failed time and time again for the group had earned a reputation for being troublemakers and drug addicts.

Delashmutt had actually known Elyse Pahler when the two were sent to the same drug-counseling center after being caught with drugs before entering high school. The two were in the same support group and had a speaking relationship for a short time. Although they never became close, Delashmutt took note of the attractive Pahler who was every teenage boy's dream with her blonde locks and light blue eyes. Her cool attitude toward life also made her extremely attractive to Delashmutt. Although he occasionally spoke to Elyse, he did not have a great deal to do with her at the high school as the two drifted into very different cliques that had little social interaction. (13)

Shannon and Angel never felt comfortable around Fiorella, Delashmutt, Williams, and Casey and made their feelings known to Elyse. However, the adventurous teen found something intriguing about the members of Hatred. It never dawned on her that the four outsiders who she somewhat admired were vicious Satanists plotting the death of an innocent young girl. Pahler never would have dreamt in her wildest imaginings that Hatred actually hated her and wanted to kill her in a bizarre occult ritual.

Elyse had noticed the Satanic symbols one of the boys would paint in the art class they shared together. Her free-spirited streak made the crew of Devil worshipers seem different and, consequently, desirable. In her need to explore life, Elyse was open to new and even dangerous activities and drugs made the lure of Hatred all the more real for her. Unlike Shannon and Angel, Elyse trusted strangers and saw the good in everyone around her. It just was not in her nature to mistrust anyone or feel that there were those around her who had sinister intentions. This purview proved to be a fatal flaw. (14)

I Love You and I'm Going to Bed

During May 1995, after returning home from school one day, Elyse Pahler noticed Fiorella, Delashmutt, William, and Casey standing just down the street from her house. Elyse was in her typical upbeat mood as she strutted down the sidewalk. The four boys began shouting in her direction and asking for her assistance. When she approached them, one of them said they needed help and that a friend had fallen down the embankment at the side of the road and injured his leg. When Elyse came over, she looked down the bank and saw no one there. All four boys surrounded Elyse and smiled and gaped at her with maniacal gazes.

Suddenly, she was pushed off balance and plummeted down the embankment. Lianne Pahler happened to be walking down the street and saw the whole incident and rushed over to see what was happening. As she approached, all four members of Hatred scattered. Elyse arose and started to brush and pat the sand

and dirt off of her clothes. Her mother was concerned and wanted to know what happened. But Elyse had no viable explanation. (15)

That night, her parents questioned her about the incident. Elyse replied that she thought the boys were just engaging in harmless games. She said they had been following her around over the past week or so, but she did not think it a serious matter. It must be remembered that Elyse was an extremely attractive and popular young lady and most likely had more than one group of boys follow her from time to time. Some had most likely engaged in physical horseplay, as teenage boys will normally do with a girl they find attractive. The Pahlers decided to trust their daughter's judgment and most likely considered the whole incident to be nothing more than teenage rough housing and flirtation. However, the members of Hatred had a far more sinister agenda that day and if it were not for Lisanne's chance intervention, the day's events would have ended quite differently.

Elyse did mention to her friends that she found the incident with Hatred to be weird but did not sense anything dangerous. In fact, she had begun to somewhat enjoy Jacob's attention and had known him, at least from a distance, for over a year. They too had spoken around school, and Jacob had invited her to party with the band at the Pipe of Death on several occasions. Elyse really never saw these boys as any sort of threat, and she had spent a great deal of time with much stranger boys who would share drugs with her. Elyse even sneaked a few of these teenagers into her bedroom for covert marijuana sessions. (16)

On July 21, 1995, Elyse met up with Hatred again -- this time it was a chance meeting at a mutual friend's house. Jacob asked her for her phone number and said he could get his hands on some powerful marijuana that he would gladly share with her. Elyse's desire for illicit drugs never waned, and she was used to having boys supply her with free narcotics. Consequently, she saw nothing wrong or unusual about what Delashmutt had proposed.

That evening Delashmutt called Elyse and said he had some marijuana and LSD to give her, and they arranged it so that she would meet the boys just a few steps from her house after midnight. She decided to hang out with Hatred, smoke some weed, and drop the acid and be back in bed before her parents found out. (17)

That night Elyse took some pillows and stuffed them under the covers and arranged the bedding into a human shape. She did this because her parents had been doing spot checks to make sure she had not sneaked out at night. At her normal bedtime, Elyse called to her parents. What she said was the last words they would ever hear from their beloved Elyse:

"I love you and I'm going to bed." (18)

Virgin Sacrifice

After Elyse had hoodwinked her parents into thinking she was going to bed, she waited for the allotted time to meet with Hatred. Elyse was wearing black sweatpants and a sweater over a thermal top and no shoes. She slipped out of the large French doors in her bedroom and made her way to the meeting point.

Fiorella, Delushmutt, and Casey were there waiting for her. Travis Williams had been arrested for an unrelated incident and was not present.

The four teens dropped the acid and decided to go to a secluded area nearby that was engulfed with eucalyptus trees that would act as cover while they smoked marijuana. As they made their way into the dense thicket, the effects of the LSD began to take effect and Elyse became somewhat dazed and stumbled to the ground. One of the boys had a flashlight and Elyse gazed at the beam as the four began to smoke more pot. When the drugs set in, the three boys hatched their evil plan. (19)

One of the boys went over and pulled Elyse to her feet by violently grabbing her beautiful mane of blonde hair. He dragged her further into the underbrush with his two companions close behind. When they got her to a secluded enough spot, they shoved her to the ground. One of the three removed his belt and put it around the hapless girl's neck and began tightening it until Elyse's eyes began to bulge. She briefly passed out but awoke to one of the boys stabbing her in the neck with a knife. This was the ornate ritual knife the boys had purchased from the Church of Satan affiliated website *Maldicta*. The ill-fated teenager clawed at the belt and frantically tried to fight off her attackers.

In desperation, Elyse was able to scream, but this was soon muffled by the hand of one of her attackers. The ritual knife was passed to each assailant who in turn stabbed Elyse for a total of twelve stab wounds. As she lay on the ground, she began to call for her mother and also began to pray to God to save her from this fate. The boys responded by stomping on her neck. One of the four dragged her by the feet to a clearing the boys had already visited. The members of Hatred removed her clothes and pressed her up against a tree which they had earlier sanctified to the Prince of Darkness as a sacrificial altar. They spread her legs and waited for Elyse Marie Pahler to die from blood loss. (20)

The boys sexually abused the dead body as part of the virgin sacrifice to Lucifer and won their tickets to hell. It has been speculated that the three returned on several occasions to further sexually defile the rotting corpse. (21)

Second Thoughts

For the next nine months, Elyse Pahler's body lay hidden in the thicket while her parents frantically tried to find out what happened to their daughter the night she went missing. The police were convinced she was just another runaway who would eventually turn up. Rumors circulated that Elyse had run off with a boy and false reports claimed she was sighted in several nearby towns. After the first few months, the Pahlers started to suspect that Elyse may have run off with some boy but still felt there was something more sinister that may have befallen their bubbly daughter. They repeatedly questioned her friends in the hopes of discovering her whereabouts, but this proved futile.

As the months rolled on, Royce Casey became more and more detached from his two friends who shared his interest in Satanism and Death Metal music. He also began to attend a local evangelical church and spent less and less time with his two fellow necrophiliacs. Travis Williams was sent to prison for shooting an elderly woman not long before the murder of Elyse and was off the streets. Fiorella and Delashmutt remained close friends, but Casey seemed much more distant and uncommitted to their Satanic coven. He would meet with Fiorella and Delashmutt but only afforded them his company because he feared they would kill him if he ever left Hatred. (22)

Casey began to have strong feelings of guilt about the ritual immolation of Elyse and started to realize the horrible thing he had done. The teenager kept having visions of Elyse's eyes as she lay dead in the thicket. The thought of her lying there in the branches began to dominate his thoughts, and it haunted him day and night. This all came to a head when, while walking home one day, he happened upon a missing person's flyer with Elyse's face and joyful smile beaming out at him. It was as if Elyse herself was asking him to set the record straight with her family so she could finally rest in peace.

On March 13, 1996, Royce Casey walked into the Arroyo Grande Police Department and told the desk officers he had some information on the missing Elyse Pahler. The uniformed officers were quite awestruck when the teenager confessed to her murder and even named the two other accomplices who participated in the killing. The detectives took his testimony and then booked him for murder. Fiorella and Delashmutt were later arrested. All three youths were incarcerated during the investigation. The leads Casey gave the police quickly paid off. (23)

Elyse's body was found at the exact spot in the thicket that Casey said she would be. At this juncture, all that was left was skeletal remains. The leg bones were spread, indicating that the body had been sexually abused at some point. The remains of Elyse Pahler were positively identified via dental records. David and Lianne Pahler were shocked and disgusted by the grim discovery but were also somewhat relieved they finally learned the fate of their daughter.

Suing Slayer

The trial of the three teenage killers made international headlines and the details concerning Satanic ceremonies and necrophilia became fodder for the tabloids as well as the mainstream media. Casey testified against his two friends. The boys' love of the band Slayer and their devotion to the Prince of Darkness accented much of the proceedings. In 1997, all three defendants were convicted and sentenced to 26 years to life for the murder of Elyse Marie Pahler. (24)

David and Lianne Pahler were chilled to the bone when they discovered during the court proceedings that the boys were all fans of Slayer and that this band may have influenced their criminal actions. The couple were unfamiliar with this type of music and were horrified when it was revealed that the lyrics to this band's songs openly advocated Satanism, murder, drugs, and necrophilia. Such music and

themes were alien to their worldview, and the Pahlers had no idea that popular entertainment encouraged such sinister forms of art. In their reckoning, there was something extremely wrong about musicians and their recording companies who produced and promoted albums that openly encouraged violence and illegal sex.

In his deposition, Fiorella told police that Slayer, “started to influence the way I looked at things.” The Pahlers responded quickly on learning about the boys’ musical tastes and filed a lawsuit against the band claiming that Slayer, its label, producer Rick Rubin, and all music retailers should all be held liable for providing the youths with the subversive material which goaded them to perform a virgin sacrifice. “This case isn't about art,” opined David Pahler. “It's about marketing. Slayer and others in the industry have developed sophisticated strategies to sell their genre of music to adolescent boys. They don't care whether the violent, misogynistic message in these lyrics causes children to do harmful things. They couldn't care less what their fans did to our daughter. All they care about is money.” (25)

Slayer’s legal representation and the related music companies said the band’s work is protected by the First Amendment's freedom of speech clause. Pahler’s attorney Allen Hutkin argued, “This case has nothing to do with the First Amendment. It's about protecting children. The Pahler family is not out to censor or to stop Slayer from making this music. They're simply saying we don't want them to market this stuff to kids without parents being involved in the decision about the kids getting to hear this stuff. They would like it to be off limits. .. Just like a child can't go to X-rated movies, they don't want them to be able to buy X-rated music. Kids can't go watch snuff films, but we're giving them snuff music. People say not every kid who listens to Slayer turns into a killer. The reality is [that *Slayer* is] standing up at the top of the Empire State Building throwing golf balls off. They may not kill somebody with the first golf ball. They may not even kill somebody with the second golf ball or the third, but eventually they're going to hit somebody on the head and kill them.” (26)

The Pahler family lawsuit is reminiscent of several legal cases that exploded in the 1980s. The famous Judas Priest case in which two adolescents agreed to a suicide pact because an album may have contained the subliminal message “*do it*,” was dismissed after it was discovered that all sorts of words and phrases can be heard when playing musical tracks in reverse. (27)

Ozzy Osbourne has had the most legal cases lodged against him for his music’s depraved content. The first case centered on a suicide pact (three teenagers took their own lives while listening to his records); the second because of a boy who placed the barrel of shotgun under his chin and pulled the trigger while listening to “Suicide Solution”. The third and fourth suits were also suicide cases -- one in which Ozzy’s albums were found at the scene of the suicides; the other involved a boy who told his dad that Osbourne had the solution before shooting himself. All of the cases were thrown out of the courts. (28)

The three boys involved in the Pahler murder all seemed to be in agreement that Slayer was the driving force behind their debased actions. Delashmutt stated that,

“It was harmless at first. We used to smoke weed, play guitar, kick it. I was just into heavy metal music.” Fiorello was more serious about the idea. “It gets inside your head,” he told a counselor a year after Pahler's murder. “It's almost embarrassing that I was so influenced by the music. The music started to influence the way I looked at things.” Almost as an afterthought in another interview, he added, “Of course, I feel bad that she's dead.” Delashmutt noted that once Fiorella asked him if he'd be down for “sacrificing a, whatever, a virgin. I didn't take it seriously. I said ‘whatever’.” (29)

Lawyers for the Pahlers hoped to use the argument that the music companies knowingly sold Slayer's music realizing that the band's violent images and lyrics might foment violence. The firm dealing with the case was Milberg Weiss Bershad Hynes & Lerach, the same team that won the court case stating that RJ Reynolds Tobacco Company had marketed the Joe Camel character to children with the deliberate intention to get underage kids to start smoking. The Pahler lawsuit stated, “The distribution and marketing of this obscene and harmful material to adolescent males constituted aiding and abetting of the criminal acts described in this complaint. None of the vicious crimes committed against Elyse Marie Pahler would have occurred without the intentional marketing strategy of the death metal band Slayer.”

The 38-page brief also included pages of Slayer lyrics (specifically to the songs “Altar of Sacrifice”, “Kill Again”, “Tormentor” and “Necrophiliac”). It also included photos, liner notes, and information on the boys involved, as well as cited civil rights violations against Elyse Pahler. It also included negligent supervision charges against the parents of Delashmutt, Fiorella and Casey. (30)

Slayer band members did have much to say about the case. Back in 2001, drummer Paul Bostaph said, “They're trying to blame the whole thing on us. That's such nonsense. If you're gonna do something stupid like that, you should get in trouble for it.” He also noted that the boys hadn't even done the rituals that were outlined in the songs correctly, anyway. Singer Tom Araya quipped, “We're part evil. If we were really evil, we would be doing everything we're writing about.”

Judge E. Jeffrey Burke, who adjudicated the case, reviewed the band's lyrics and recordings and dismissed the Pahler's claim, believing that it infringed on the band's right to freedom of speech. “There's not a legal position that could be taken that would make Slayer responsible for the girl's death,” Judge Burke opined in his decision. “Where do you draw the line? You might as well start looking through the library at every book on the shelf.” He also noted, “Slayer lyrics are repulsive and profane. But they do not direct or instruct listeners to commit the acts that resulted in the vicious torture-murder of Elyse Pahler.” (31)

Judge Burke also observed that the lyrics to the Slayer music appeared to be more descriptive than instructive, as the family of Elyse Pahler had claimed, and advised the Pahler family to redesign the claim and try submitting it again. The Pahlers made two more unsuccessful attempts at suing Slayer for complicity in their daughter's strange ritualistic murder. (32)

“What are we talking about here?” David Pahler stated “We have children ending their lives because the lyrics say they're worthless. It's about money. That's the driving force. I can't imagine that the adults in the band, in the distribution end, really think this so-called music or the lyrics are good.” Elyse's mother Lisanne added, “They have families of their own. Where's their conscience?” (33)

The Pahlers have since formed a non-profit organization called the Elyse Pahler Trust for the Protection and Welfare of Children that works and educates the general public about the dangers that Satanic-inspired music presents and also works to develop computer software and networks that aids parents and law enforcement in locating missing children.

End Notes

1-24) Clarkson, Wensley, *In The Name of Satan*, Saint Martin's Paperbacks 1997.

25-33) “Your Flesh is all I Need: Slayer vs. the American Legal System”:
<http://www.letthemetlead.com/article2.php?a=archives/issue12/wildworld.htm>

8

Lucifer at Columbine

The rampage which ensued on April 20, 1999 (Hitler's Birthday) at Columbine High School, situated in a quiet and scenic suburb of Denver, left an indelible mark on the collective American psyche. Even before the onslaught ended, journalists were speculating as to the motivations of the shooters. Michael Moore was later to make an academy award winning motion picture which basically blamed the easy accessibility of firearms and media-induced hysteria to explain the events surrounding that most horrible day when 12 children and 1 teacher died, 20 people were wounded and hundreds left with deep emotional scares. However, there were clear and distinct Satanic elements to this murder which Moore did not cover but instead focused on vindicating the clearly innocent Marilyn Manson, who was unfairly made a scapegoat for the crimes by the popular media.

Eric Harris and Dylan Klebold were bullied by athletes at Columbine High School and joined a rag-tag group of outsiders called the Trench Coat Mafia. This loose association consisted of various misfits whose inability to function in structured environments caused them to adopt a variety of antisocial philosophies. Even their name is a reference to organized crime.

It should be acknowledged that secondary education as it exists in America today has little tolerance for such non-traditional students and schools must design more inclusive programs which afford marginalized teenagers a sense of self-worth. Students who perform poorly in academic and athletic pursuits must be taught that they have value merely by being human beings and they do possess talents which are of benefit to society. The model of "winners and losers" (in reality a form of Social Darwinism), which is encouraged by teachers, must be replaced with more positive models based on the intrinsic self-worth of individuals. Bullying is also a rampant problem as well and new strategies must be developed by educational psychologists to curtail this widespread menace. These issues must not be lost in learning the lesson of Columbine and Michael Moore was correct in pointing these issues out in his film.

For those who believe the easy availability of firearms caused the final bloodbath should consider that Brooks Brown - a member of the Trench Coat Mafia -- claims that Harris was experimenting with pipe bombs for over a year before that fateful day. As pointed out in Michael Moore's film *Bowling for Columbine*, Canadian crime statistics support the point that access to firearms is not the primary factor in the shootings. If guns were not readily available, then the pair would have used a series of explosives that most definitely would have caused far more bloodshed and death. That's not to say the boys did not prepare. They brought an arsenal with them including a TEC DC-9 semi-automatic assault pistol, two illegal sawn-off shotguns, and a short-muzzle carbine military-style rifle (also used by two students in another schoolyard massacre in 1998 in Jonesboro, Arkansas.) The teen killers

also brought more than 30 homemade explosive devices. Harris and Klebold had bombs with them on that dreadful day most of which either failed to explode or were not used. Weapons are secondary when pondering the real reasons behind Columbine.

The Trench Coat Mafia Were Neo-Nazi Satanists

The Trench Coat Mafia devised an eclectic model of antisocial teachings ranging from Hollywood films advocating school violence (*The Basketball Diaries*) to the glaring misanthropy of Black Metal music and violent video games like Doom. Satanism was certainly a major part of their worldview. According to Brooks Brown in a CNN interview the day after the shootings, both Harris and Klebold were “big into Anti-God Satanism.”

A further investigation into this matter demonstrates that the Trench Coat Mafia was a Devil Worshiping cult. This group organized before Harris and Klebold were students at Columbine. The original impetus for the formation of the Trench Coat Mafia was one of defense against bullying on the part of a group of students who unified to fight against harassers. As freshman, Harris and Klebold were bullied and noticed how the Trench Coat Mafia stood up for themselves. As Brooks Brown stated in his book *No Easy Answers* (2002):

One day at lunch the jocks threw a bag full of ice water on a member of the group, which led to a fight outside. When security intervened, the Trench Coat Mafia kids wound up with three-day suspensions. The jocks that started the fight were never even sent to the office. (1)

Consequently, Harris and Klebold joined up with this loose association as a means to fend off or at least retaliate against violence committed against them. However, the Trench Coat Mafia adopted some nefarious beliefs and practices as part of their identity. Brown further states that during Freshman year some members of the Trench Coat Mafia were Satanists and some were Wiccans (Witches) while others professed no religious ideology at all. As the years passed and the original members of the Trench Coat Mafia graduated, the younger members began to adopt a far more solid Satanist stance. Anton LaVey’s *Satanic Bible* became the most popular book among members of the TCM and the group began to adopt more and more of a Satanic outlook. The notion of Satanic inversion became an important part of their purview. This involves the overturning of concepts for a diabolical end. For example, a most chilling example of this comes in the yearbook photo of the Trench Coat Mafia that has as part of its group inscription the sentence: *Who says we’re different? Insanity is healthy.*

Much like LaVey, the Trench Coat Mafia incorporated neo-Nazism into their warped paradigm. The British newspaper *Guardian* (April 25, 1999) took note of this fact:

America found a new monster this week: the 'Trench Coat Mafia' with its black tunics, long black "duster" trench coats, berets, and sunglasses even in class. They greeted each other with the Nazi salute instead of a high five and kept to themselves.

Eric Harris was a huge fan of Hitler and even chose the Hitler's birthday as the most auspicious time to enact his deadly rampage. His web page stated the following:

BASIC RULES: Hitler is cool. Jocks suck and football sucks too. Negroes need to put down their forties and head back to Africa. School sucks and should be bombed. Teachers are the real death camp guards. The holocaust never happened, but it would have been cool if it had. The big secret is that cheerleaders have more problems with gas than average Americans. Doom is a fun game. German industrial music is better than all other music. If something explodes, it's cooler than if it doesn't.

Harris's fascination with Fascism ran deep as he took the time to learn German and enjoyed listening to industrial music from Germany, which expressed murderous and apocalyptic intentions. On the day of the shooting, his webpage had the following lyrics from a German industrial Goth band posted on it:

I HAVE COME TO ROCK YOUR WORLD
I HAVE COME TO SHAKE YOUR FAITH
ANATHEMATIC ANARCHIST
I HAVE COME TO TAKE MY PLACE

I AM YOUR UNCONSCIOUSNESS
I AM UNRESTRAINED EXCESS
METAMORPHIC RESTLESSNESS
I
I AM YOUR APOCALYPSE
I AM YOUR BELIEF UNWROUGHT
MONOLITHIC JUGGERNAUT
I

SHOCKWAVE
MASSIVE ATTACK
ATOMIC BLAST
SON OF A GUN IS BACK

CHAOS-PANIC
NO RESISTANCE
DETONATIONS IN A DISTANCE

APOCALYPSE NOW
WALLS OF FLAME
BILLOWING SMOKE
WHO'S TO BLAME

FORGED FROM STEEL
IRON WILL
SHIT FOR BRAINS
BORN TO KILL

ALL ARE EQUAL
NO DISCRIMINATION
SON OF A GUN
A SIMPLE EQUATION

SON OF A GUN
MASTER OF FATE
BOWS TO NO GOD, KINGDOM OR STATE

WATCH OUT
SON OF A GUN
SUPERHERO NUMBER 1

Harris also had the following advice posted on his site:

How to shoot someone with a gun:

1. Make sure you have a gun and it's loaded and cocked
2. Point the gun at the person, preferably at a vital organ
3. Pull the trigger
4. Shout "Heil Hitler!" and run away real quick!

So if you're not a jock, Jew or jiggaboo, not a wop, spic or country hick, not a jap, slant or my old gypsy aunt and want to get with the program, post in my non-Jew Whites-only Hitler Memorial Forum, or, alternatively (as a concession to those not comprising the Master Race), my new colored forum!

According to the *Guardian* article, Craig Scott -- a student who witnessed some of the shootings -- recalls Harris calling to Klebold: "Hey look, there's a nigger over here." Isaiah Shoels was one of the few African American students at Columbine High School and was a star athlete who had dreams of going into the music business. Bae Gottini, another witness, remembers either Harris or Klebold stamping a heavy boot on Isaiah's throat, pinning him to the floor. They were jeering at him, like he didn't belong in the community and didn't deserve to live. And, pointing to Isaiah's slightly jutting forehead: "Look at this black kid's brain! Awesome, man!" After about five minutes of this taunting came the bullet which ended the teenager's life.

Harris and Klebold targeted an ex-Satanist

The Trench Coat Mafia justified and promoted inverted notions which added to and fueled Harris and Klebold's antisocial thought processes and contributed to their destructive behavior in 1999. There is also evidence of a more sophisticated Satanic cult than previously imagined of which Harris and Klebold were most likely members.

Misty Bernall, whose daughter died in the melee, related the story of how her daughter was part of a diabolical cult in her touching tribute *She Said Yes: The Unlikely Martyrdom of Cassie Bernall* (1999). The Bernalls noticed that their attractive daughter was becoming depressed and withdrawn. As a means to understand the reasons behind Cassie's depression, they invaded her privacy and read a series of notes and letters which were written by her friend Mona (a made-up name) which indicated that she was involved with a Luciferian cult made up of local teenagers. The nature of this secret sect greatly disturbed Misty Bernall and her husband.

The notes described a blood-drinking Satanic group whose initiation ceremony involved drinking the blood of a scarified cat. Her friend Mona also described how she and Cassie were into drugs, smoking, and drinking -- all part of this cult. Cassie and Mona were also into self-mutilation -- the practice of inflicting cuts and wounds on one's self as a means to generate intense pain which acts as a sort of "high" for people who practice this act. Cassie's mom also found poems the seventeen-year-old wrote which spoke of her wishing to meet "the angel of the dark" and "the emptiness of my soul." Another note written by Cassie stated she had become what she never wanted to be "and there was no way out." (This suggests that Cassie may have been a full member of the Satanic cult and not a fringe member as she is often depicted as being.)

In a startling note, Mona advised Cassie to kill her parents and the note was decorated with bats and vampire fangs suggesting that parental murder was part of this unnamed cult's teachings. The note read: "We need to murder your parents . . . kill me with your parents, then kill yourself so you don't go to jail. (2)

The Bernalls wisely confronted Cassie, who at first tried to downplay the letters claiming they were in good fun and nothing more. They also contacted Mona's mother who oddly sided with the girls' right to belong to any group they chose. The Bernalls informed the local authorities who really were in no position to do anything about the blood-drinking cult. They also called their local pastor for guidance. He did take the situation seriously and offered advice to the desperate couple. The first thing they did was ground Cassie, restricting her from access to Mona and making her accountable for her whereabouts at all times. As with any teenager, Cassie resented the restrictions and at first protested her near imprisonment.

The Bernalls took Cassie out of the public school she attended, enrolled her in a Christian day school and forbade her from seeing Mona or any of her old associates fearing they may have been members of the Satanic cult. Cassie received spiritual counseling from pastors and teachers who used a "soft gloves" approach to the troubled teenager. Cassie did not respond right away, as would be expected of any teen that has harsh restrictions placed on them and forced to go to a new school and make new friends.

Over time, Cassie changed and began to be her old self -- now smiling and enjoying her life as she did before she began frequenting the Devil worshipping cult. A particular event seems to have inspired the pretty teen. What turned Cassie

around and changed her into a new young woman? It was a Christian youth retreat weekend run by an evangelical church, one that was not even her own congregation. When Cassie's mom and dad came to pick her up, she stepped off the church bus and looked her parents in the face and simply said, "I've changed." Although it took some time, Cassie made some major life changes and put her religion at the center of her life. Her pastor was a big help to the family and to Cassie, and it looked like all would be well. If only life were that simple.

Satanic cults hate to lose any members -- especially attractive young girls who were within their grasp of evil. After Cassie broke off from the cult and began only associating with Christians, the coven began to harass her and the entire Bernall family. The Satanic cult members would drive by her house and shout and pelt the house with stones. This became so acute that the Bernalls packed up and moved to a new location which abutted the grounds of Columbine High School. Cassie had a Christian friend who attended Columbine and her parents believed that she had reformed herself enough to attend a public high school. Columbine had an active Christian community and the Bernalls lived close by, where Misty Bernall could monitor her daughter's interactions.

From all accounts Cassie enjoyed her new school and had a group of friends who shared her interest in the Bible. She would often carry her bible with her and read it in the library and during breaks. Her class work went well and her free time was spent with her Christian youth group friends. Things were going well for Cassie, until April 20, 1999 when she went to the library to study for a Shakespeare exam.

Brooks Brown reports in his book that Eric Harris had missed his philosophy exam that morning and it made him wonder what Eric was up to. Harris was an honor student who held a part-time job at a pizza joint with Dylan Klebold. This is one reason the parents never interfered or probed their son's pastimes -- he got high marks, earned his own money and minded his own business. He had been medicated for depression, but his parents thought this was merely a teenage phase. He was due to graduate in a few weeks and was highly computer literate. Prospects for a bright future seemed within their son's grasp.

Brown stepped out of the building that day to smoke a covert cigarette when Eric Harris pulled up and parked near where he was standing. Harris began to unload several duffel bags from the car and when Brown asked him what he was doing and why he missed the exam, Harris told him to leave. Having known how unstable Harris could be, Brown quickly made his way off of school grounds thinking that Harris might set off a pipe bomb as a prank, and Brown really did not want the hassle of possibly being implicated. As he walked a few blocks away, he heard an explosion and quickly determined that Harris was murdering his classmates. Brown asked a stranger for help and sat in a strange living room as he called his father.

Harris and Klebold entered the school at about 11:30 AM, set off some of their bombs, and began the heartless attack. In the midst of the shooting spree, Valeen Schnurr -- who lay on the floor wounded -- began to pray to God for help. Eric Harris took a few minutes from his deadly rampage to belittle her Christian beliefs and left her in a pool of blood to ponder the impotency of her God in such

situations. Luckily, Schnurr survived her physical wounds -- Eric Harris was wrong; her prayers were answered.

The shooters then entered the library where Cassie Bernall was studying for her exam. The official account does not specify exactly what transpired between Harris, Klebold, and Bernall. Some say Cassie was asked if she was a Christian and said "yes" and was killed by Harris. Others contend that this transaction did not appear in the sheriff's final report and, consequently, was false. However, an eyewitness account given just after the shooting is the best evidence in existence for what actually transpired between Cassie and her killer. This testimony appeared in Britain's *Guardian* newspaper on April 25, 1999:

Bae Gottini, a 15-year-old with braces on her teeth, said it was no random shooting -- it was worse than that. Bae was covering under a table with her friend Cassie Bernall when Harris -- with "a dumb giggle" and covered in blood -- took Cassie by the hair and pulled it, handgun to her head. In the yearbook photo, Cassie wears a smile and a cross; Harris knew she was religious and had just been to Britain with her church. So for this murder he elected to play the Almighty.

"Where's your God now?" he jibed. "Please don't kill me," pleaded Cassie. "I must be your God, because I'm in total control," replied Harris, pulling tighter on her hair. "You are not my God," said Cassie. "Tell me I am your God," said Harris. "You are not my God." And with that he blew her brains out.

Here, we again see the Satanic notion of inversion where Eric Harris replaced the Christian God with himself -- a ritual which can be traced from Aleister Crowley through Anton LaVey to the Satanist Eric Harris.

It is the contention of this author that Eric Harris was part of the Satanic cult which Cassie Bernall had quit. The fact that Bernall was harassed and had to move away to avoid being stalked by sect members speaks of the depth of her involvement with the cult. If Cassie were merely a fringe member of the coven than the other members would not have bothered harassing her by constantly shouting outside her home and hitting the side of the house with objects to rattle the nerves of the Bernall family.

The testimony of Bae Gottini makes it certain that Bernall's death was not the act of a random shooting -- it was the deliberate targeting of a Christian who was once a Satanist. It is very possible that Cassie was fully initiated into the cult by taking a blood oath and possibly engaging in a sex magick ritual. This is evinced by the fact that Cassie wrote that she "*had become what she never wanted to be and there was no way out.*" in a diary passage which appears in her mother's book. This strongly suggests that Cassie was a fully initiated member of the blood-drinking cult which makes members take oaths giving the cult the right to ritually murder the member if he or she ever tries to quit the Satanic sect or betray it in any way. Cassie did both of these things and the fact that her family had to flee their home because of Satanic stalkers really bring this point home.

Cassie would not likely have shared the sexual nature of her involvement with her parents or pastor, out of pure teenage shame. Perhaps she confessed her sex-

magic involvement when she went on the retreat with a group of strangers from another Evangelical church. It is often easier to open up to a stranger than with people one knows -- that is a fact of human psychology. The biggest change in Cassie came after this retreat, and it is not beyond the realm of possibility that she admitted to sexual contact with Satanic sect members at the retreat.

This in no way demeans Cassie's designation as a Christian martyr -- in fact it boosts the contention that she died purely for her Faith. Cassie Bernall refused to acknowledge Eric Harris as God and paid the price with her life. She refused to break the first commandment and knew she would die for doing so. Not long after killing Cassie, Harris and Klebold did exactly what many of Aleister Crowley's followers did - they killed themselves in homage to their diabolical god.

Stunning Links to Church of Satan Priests

According to a report filed by Forrest Sawyer on MSNBC in 2001, both shooters were on a Satanic chat room a few months before the shooting spree which is run by Satanist Les Masters. They communicated with a High Priest of The First Church of Satan (a spin-off group) named Lord Egan who was at his home in Salem, Massachusetts. Although no violence was discussed, the boys did express their dissatisfaction with life, and this demonstrated a closer connection to Satanism than was previously believed.

This went virtually unreported in the popular press and the news media instead focused on the antics of Marilyn Manson as the cause of the bloodbath. Eric Harris also posted a drawing he made of the Devil supervising his murderous actions just a few hours before the deadly rampage on his website -- definitive proof that he was undertaking a Satanic ritual murder. In this, his final message to the world, Harris also posted to his site the lyrics to a German industrial song whose words speak of starting the apocalypse with guns. America Online (AOL) shut down Harris's site a few hours after the tragic events but not before it was downloaded by several groups, like the Simon Wiesenthal Center, which had been keeping an eye on Harris's site for quite some time because of his pro-Hitler/pro-bomb making posts.

No one in the media bothered to explore what Harris and Klebold were into apart from their musical tastes. However, is there any proof that Klebold and Harris were somehow fulfilling some greater Satanic agenda to promote their pro-Satanism, anti-Christian views? The answer is yes.

In a documentary called *Speak of the Devil* (1993) - a biography of Anton LaVey - Boyd Rice, a high-ranking priest in the Church of Satan and mentor of shock rocker Marilyn Manson, can be seen in a bowling alley dressed all in black like the

Columbine Shooters. He speaks of how most Satanists meet in bowling allies “working on their scores”. This segment is quite eerie when one considers that Harris and Klebold bowled for almost two hours before they began their murderous rampage.

In a 2002 remake of the album *Music Martinis and Misanthropy* by Boyd Rice and Friends, a bonus song is included where Rice addresses the Columbine shootings and has the line, “*Boyd Rice is the one who did it -- now I've heard the secret news.*” This is not to say the Church of Satan or Boyd Rice are criminally culpable in any way, shape, or form for Harris and Klebold’s crimes, but one cannot help wonder who is really behind this rampage.

On June 20, 2006 the Jefferson County Sheriff’s office released over almost 1000 pages of documents seized from Harris and Klebold’s homes and cars. They depict bizarre demonic drawings and demented plans for destruction. Eric Harris drew a Satanic symbol called the Cross of Lorraine which Boyd Rice adopted as his personal standard in the 90s. Harris portrayed the Cross as if it were an object of veneration with beams of powerful light emanating from the diabolical icon. No other drawings in the collection possess such devotional qualities and this further suggests that Rice wielded some deranged influence over the shooters.

It becomes even clearer when one considers that Rice is Denver-based -- just a short bus ride from Columbine. It would be interesting to ascertain whether either of these boys owned a copy of *Speak of the Devil*, but they could have easily viewed the film if some other member of the Trench Coat Mafia owned a copy. Brooks Brown's assertion that the Trench Coat Mafia was Satanic in nature makes this seem very plausible. Rice's new Columbine bonus song makes it just about certain.

There is no way to stop this type of violent encouragement because most Satanist leaders hide behind free speech laws. We can, however, educate young people against the manipulating tendencies of Satanists. They get some cheap thrill out of pushing children and unstable adults over the edge to commit sick crimes while avoiding personal liability themselves. We must warn young people against such tactics.

For example, when one considers that Shane Bugbee, a Church of Satan priest and the last person to interview Anton LaVey, praises the actions of Klebold and Harris by honoring them on the cover of his new video. The girl depicted on Bugbee's cover looks a great deal like Cassie Bernall. Bugbee is encouraging violence against Christians.

Why doesn’t the extremely talented Mr. Michael Moore make a documentary about this sort of sick Satanic encouragement?

End Notes

- 1) Brooks, Brown, *No Easy Answers*, Lantern Books: 2002.
- 2) Bernal, Misty, *She Said Yes*, Plough: 2001 pp. 38-39.

9

Angel of Death

On March 21, 2005 sixteen-year-old Jeff Weise stepped out of his grandfather's house located on the Red Lake Indian Reservation in Minnesota wearing a bullet-proof vest and carrying several firearms. Inside the house, his grandfather, fifty-eight year-old police officer Daryl Lussier, and his companion, thirty-two-year-old Michelle Sigana, lay dead after being shot by the deranged teenager. Jeff used his grandfather's own police weapons to kill the beloved Lussier and his companion and then drove away in the reservation squad car which the deceased lawman used to patrol his people's land. Weise sped toward his high school where he planned to gun down as many people as he could before taking his own life. This cherub-faced teenager had a mission to fulfill and by the end of that dark day five students would be dead with seven others seriously wounded. Weise believed himself to be the Angel of Death -- most commonly used to denote Nazi doctor Josef Mengele but is also one of the many titles of Lucifer, Prince of this World. (1)

Native American Nazi Satanist

The Red Lake Indian Reservation is home to some 5,000 Chippewa Native Americans. It is considered to be the poorest Indian population in the United States. Tribal life is hard and little money flows into the area from manufacturing or high-tech jobs. The tribe opened two casinos, but the region did not attract huge crowds like the Foxwood and Mohegan Sun casinos opened by Native Americans in Connecticut, which are in close proximity to New York and Boston. Many of the inhabitants are on various forms of public aid just to make ends meet. Yet the Chippewa take great pride in their culture and the fact that they are one of the few full-blooded Indian nations still left on independent native land. (2)

The Red Lake Band has lived in this region since a different tribe moved from the area in the mid-1700s. There are historical sites of Indian Battles at Battle River and Sandy River where the last battle was fought between the Sioux (Dakota) in 1765. In 1806, the Northwest Fur Company established a Trading Post at the east end of Red Lake near the Blackduck River. In 1865, the American Fur Company established a Trading Post at Red Lake, which was also the site of the first Post Office in Beltrami County in 1875. Other historic sites include: Pike Creek at Red Lake, site of the Historic Land Agreement of 1889, where seven determined and foresighted chiefs resisted complying with the Dawes Land Allotment Act of 1887. "The Narrows" at Ponemah Point is quite scenic and the site of a historic village. The twentieth century and the new millennium have not been kind to the Red Lake tribe. (3)

In 1979, dissidents staged an insurrection against tribal leaders when one of their sympathizers was removed from the Tribal Council. Two teenagers were killed as armed dissidents took hostages in the reservation's police station and went on a rampage, looting weapons, confiscating alcohol, and burning buildings to the ground. Five men were sentenced and jailed. (4)

More unrest swept the reservation in the 1980s in protest against alleged civil rights violations by the tribal court system, which barred lawyers and routinely denied jury trials. Three years ago, the US Justice Department ordered a crackdown on drugs and guns on the reservation after officials found evidence of executions, drive-by shootings and ritualistic violence. Local people say that marijuana dealing had recently been displaced in the area by crack cocaine. (5)

The reason for much of this unrest and crime comes from the poverty suffered by these native people. For example, nearly thirty-nine percent of the reservation's families live below the poverty line. Around forty percent of residents are unemployed and receive federal and state aid. Some fifty-seven percent of the tribal high school kids are eligible for free lunches. The school failed to meet basic federal standards for reading and math in 2004. (6)

Devil's Horns

A teenager wounded in the Red Lake High School shooting said he reached out to gunman Jeff Weise before the attack because the boy seemed to have no friends, "He looked like a cool guy, and then I talked to him a few times," fifteen-year-old Cody Thunder said just after the shootings. "He talked about guns and shooting people. Thunder said that Weise cultivated a dangerous appearance that included sculpting his hair into devil horns, "It looked like he was trying to be evil." Thunder never thought Weise would shoot up their school. "At first, I thought he was messing around; I thought it was a paintball gun or something," said Thunder, the first wounded student to describe the nation's deadliest school shooting since Columbine. (7)

"He's antisocial," one unidentified student who had shared a class with Weise told the *St Paul Pioneer Press*. "In pictures he draws, his people have little hats with Nazi signs on them," she said. Weise declared himself "a Native American National Socialist" in posts on the website of a group calling itself the Libertarian National Socialist Green Party. In a statement on its website, the group refused to wring hands over the shooting and said such events are to be expected when thinking people are crammed into an unthinking, irrational modern society. (8)

In his web posts, Weise described himself as a Native American from the Red Lake Indian reservation in Minnesota who had stumbled across the site in his study of the Third Reich as well as Nazism, amongst other things. (9)

In website postings, calling himself the Angel of Death, he wrote that when he talked in school about maintaining the tribe's ethnic purity by not marrying outside the bloodline, "I get the same old argument which seems to be so common

around here. 'We need to mix all the races, to combine all the strengths.' They (teachers) don't openly say that racial purity is wrong, yet when you speak your mind on the subject you get silenced real quick by the teachers and like-minded school officials," he wrote. (10)

In another posting he slammed fellow Indian teens for listening to rap music. "We have kids my age killing each other over things as simple as a fight, and it's because of the rap influence," he wrote. (11)

The *St. Paul Pioneer Press* described the boy's admiration for Hitler and noted that although his people had long-suffered oppression, Weise identified with the European oppressor:

"I guess I've always carried a natural admiration for Hitler and his ideals, and his courage to take on larger nations," he wrote in an online forum frequented by neo-Nazis, skinheads and wannabes last year. In one longer post, he outlined his Native Pride philosophy. "The Natives you've known to be sympathetic to the cause are probably ones who've experienced firsthand what kind of problems cultural and race mixing can cause," the weird teenager wrote. (12) "As a result of cultural dominance and interracial mixing there are barely any full-blooded Natives left. Where I live, less than one per cent of all the people on the Reservation can speak their own language, Under a National Socialist government; things for us would improve vastly" (13)

He said that he was misunderstood at school because Jewish postwar propaganda had been taught in his school systems (on reservations). "The only ones who oppose my views are the teachers at the high school, and a large portion of the student body who think a Nazi is a Klansman, or a White Supremacist thug," he wrote. "Most of the Natives I know have been poisoned by what they were taught in school. The basic 'Nazi = Bad, Jew = Good. Defend Jews at all costs'. You get the idea, the public school system has done more harm than good, and as a result it has left many on this reservation misled and misinformed." (14)

One passage Weise wrote is quite chilling,

... "I'm being blamed for a threat on the school I attend because someone said they were going to shoot up the school on 4/20, Hitler's birthday, and just because I claim being a National Socialist, guess whom they've pinned?" (15)

Five weeks later, he wrote that the school threat passed and he was cleared as a suspect. "I'm glad for that. I don't much care for jail, I've never been there and I don't plan on it."

Weise created comic books with ghastly drawings of people shooting each other and wrote stories about zombies. (16) "About a month ago, his sketch of a guitar strumming skeleton accompanied by a caption that read 'March to the death song 'til your boots fill with blood' was displayed in his English class," said classmate Parston Graves Jr. Graves, 16, said he was thinking about that picture after the shooting, "I thought that was him letting everyone know that he was going to do something," Graves said.

Weise, who routinely wore a long black trench coat, eyeliner and combat boots, has been described by several classmates as a quiet teenager. If Weise was quiet in school, he became an extrovert in cyberspace. (17) Using the online pen names Todesengel -- German for Angel of Death -- and Native Nazi, Weise posted several notes in which he said he believed Hitler got a bad rap:

“When I was growing up, I was taught (like others) that Nazis were evil and that Hitler was a very evil man. Of course, not for a second did I believe this. Upon reading up on his actions, the ideals and issues the German Third Reich addressed, I began to see how much of a lie had been painted about them. They truly were doing it for the better.” (18)

Weise's Hotmail address links him to frequent postings on one Internet forum called Rise of the Dead, a site where contributors collaborate on stories about average people attempting to survive in a zombie-infested world. (19)

Zombies

Weise also appeared to be a regular contributor to numerous fan-fiction sites related to zombies. On one, Weise identifies himself as being from Red Lake and lists himself as an amateur writer. He goes on to write: *“I'm a fan of zombie films, have been for years, as well as fan of horror movies in general. I like to write horror stories, read about Nazi Germany and history, and someday plan on moving out of the US.”* (20)

He said he was interested in finding like-minded native Indians, a goal other posters on the forum encouraged. In one posting he noted: *“Once I commit myself to something, I stay until the end.”* (21)

One of the police investigators said there could be some clues in Internet postings or on the boy's seized computer but that and other matters were still under investigation. Officials sealed off the remote town of Red Lake, 100 km south of the Canadian border, while they investigated the bloodbath. (22)

Ms. Audrey Thayer, a friend of the family who also works for the Minnesota chapter of the American Civil Liberties Union (23) office in Bemidji, near the town where the shooting occurred, said Weise's story was one of “devastation and loss”.

Ms. Thayer said Weise had been teased at school, but she didn't think that set him off. “In high school, you always have jabs at each other,” she said. Fellow student Ashley Morrison, 17, said Weise liked heavy metal music and wore chains on his pants and sported black spiky hair. (24)

Computer-Animated Rehearsal

A computer animation attributed to the Minnesota teenager shows a person shooting four people, blowing up a police car and putting a gun in his mouth and pulling the trigger. The Flash animation was posted on TheSmokingGun.com, which found it on the popular multimedia Web site Newgrounds.com, which said Jeff Weise posted it there last October under the nickname Regret, along with his picture and another animation. The 30-second animation titled "Target Practice" was posted on Newgrounds.com on October 2, 2004. It depicts a person using an automatic rifle to shoot two people in the head, a third in the chest, blowing up a squad car with a grenade, and then shooting what appears to be a Ku Klux Klan member in the head.

According to TheSmokingGun.com, "*The animated shooter then puts the barrel of a handgun in his mouth and pulls the trigger as the screen turns red and the clip ends with the closing credit screen. Bright red blood splashes across the black-and-white drawings, which are accompanied by the sounds of gunfire and an explosion.*"

William Bastone, editor of *The Smoking Gun*, said the site where they found the clip is a place where flash animation creators commonly post them and solicit comments. "I think we're confident he designed it. . . . Is he stealing someone else's stuff? It's conceivable," Bastone said, but he expressed doubt that Weise did. "It's not too much beyond stick figures and some sound effects and crude blood spatter stuff" Bastone said. Regret posted a second short called *Clown* on Newgrounds.com on Oct. 28, 2004; it depicts a man being picked off his feet and coming to a bloody demise at the hands of a sinister clown. The Smoking Gun did not put *Clown* on its web site.

The animations on Newgrounds.com are accompanied by a brief personal profile of Regret. In the profile, Regret described himself as "nothing but a Native American teenage-stoner-industrialist" who had plenty of free time because he was on "homebound schooling." (Weise was on homebound-schooling.) He said his favorite movies included the zombie film, *Dawn of the Dead*. He listed his favorite recording artists as Korn, Marilyn Manson, and Rammstein, among others.

Gleeful Shooter

After parking near the front door of the high school after gunning down his grandfather, he was confronted by two unarmed security guards -- one male and one female -- and fired two shots, witnesses said. As the female guard ran away down the hall, ushering pupils to safety, the male guard remained near Weise. "He didn't do anything. He just stared at him. And (Weise) shot him," one pupil who witnessed the shootings stated. (25)

Reggie Graves, 14, a pupil, said he was watching a film about Shakespeare when he heard the gunman blast his way past the metal detector at the school's entrance, killing the guard. Then he heard the gunman speak to his friend Ryan in a nearby classroom. "He asked Ryan if he believed in God," Reggie told a local television station. "And then he shot him." (26)

During the rampage, teachers herded pupils from one room to another to escape the shooting, while other students hid under desks. “You could hear a girl saying, ‘No, Jeff, quit, quit. Leave me alone. What are you doing?’” one pupil, Sondra Hegstrom, told *The Pioneer of Bemidji*, the local newspaper. “I called 911 from a cell phone and they said, ‘Just sit there and wait until the cops come.’” (27)

Sondra described the gunman grinning and waving as he pointed his gun at one student, and then swiveling the gun to shoot someone else. “I looked him in the eye and ran in the room, and that’s when I hid...read about it happening in other places, but not at our school. I thought our school was safe,” she stated. (28)

Ashley Morrison, another pupil, said she heard shots and saw the gunman peering through a door window of a classroom where she was hiding. But after banging at the door, he walked away and she heard more shots. “I can’t even count how many gunshots you heard, there was over 20. There were people screaming, and they made us get behind the desk,” she told reporters. (29)

Time magazine reported the account of two students on April 4, 2005, “Lajeunesse peeked over Lussier to look at the gunman. ‘His face was a mixture of anger and fear,’ she recalls. Their eyes met. He raised his gun and fired. Lajeunesse ducked. She felt something warm and wet coating her jeans. It was Lussier's blood. “I thought I was going to die,” Lajeunesse says, but her friend had taken the fatal blow. ‘Chase saved my life.’ The teacher spoke up. ‘God be with us,’ said Rogers. Provoked, the gunman shot her. He then aimed at another student, Chon'gai'la Morris, and asked, ‘Do you believe in God?’”

“‘No,’ came the answer. The gunman turned away and found other targets, shooting and killing Dwayne Lewis, Thurlene Stillday, Chanelle Rosebear and Alicia White as they huddled on the floor. He left the room and exchanged fire with police officers, who were advancing down the hallway. Retreating into Rogers' classroom, he yelled, ‘I have hostages!’ Then he turned a gun on himself and pulled the trigger. Silent throughout the ordeal, the surviving students began to scream.”

Weise was out to kill Christians in particular and mimicked Eric Harris’ actions at Columbine.

Police said a teacher and five pupils were killed at the school as well as the security man, and seven others were injured. Doctors said two of the survivors had suffered gunshot wounds to the head. “We had a couple of injuries at short range,” one said. (30)

The FBI said that a security video camera captured the gunman in a hallway, although it did not record any of the shootings. Michael Tabman, an FBI special agent, said the shooting began around 2.55 PM and lasted less than ten minutes. Although there are indications of some planning, he said, the gunman appeared to shoot people at the school at random. (31)

Goths React

When Goth Cordell Draeger read that the shooter at Red Lake High School was into Goth subculture, Draeger's world turned dark because he feared that Goth subculture was being misrepresented. "He may have listened to Marilyn Manson, but he idolized Hitler, and Hitler has nothing to do with the Goth subculture," said Draeger, who usually dresses in black. Black is typical color of Goth subculture. The senior at St. Paul Harding High school said Jeff Weise was not typical of Goths. (this is a commonly heard theme) "Please don't talk about this incident and stereotype Goths," said Draeger, 17. "This was a troubled kid. That has nothing to do with what Goths are about." (32)

Weise was "a very disturbed individual who happened to be into this form of music," said Nathan Hall, who hosts a Goth-centered Saturday night music show called *Locust Lecture* and is news director at the University of Minnesota's Radio K.

In 1979, when Goth music evolved from the punk scene, the Goth subculture was first and foremost about music," said Ryan (Frost) Simula, 30, a stage technician who said he was very much part of the Goth scene. Kids wore black clothing, Satanic rings, black lipstick and period costumes. (33)

According to the 2004 book, *What Is Goth?* by an author named Voltaire, Goths tend to be intrigued by the dark aspects of human existence -- such as death, romance, and feelings of loneliness or isolation. (34)

Sonja Hayden, owner of Pandora's coffee shop, known to be a Goth gathering place in Minneapolis' uptown neighborhood, said she still sees kids wearing black and chains, but most of the Goths seemed to have migrated to the suburbs. Or to towns outside the metro area, including Red Lake. "Kids are always looking for the new and the exciting, and for some of them, Goth seems pretty ancient," she said. (35)

"Yes, I'm Goth, and it means going against the crowd," said Grace Stromquist, 19, who says she works at a gas station. "It's more than a look," she said glancing at her black nails. "It's a lifestyle." (36)

"We're normal people," said her companion, David McNally, 17. Metal chains aside, he was dressed entirely in black -- black arm warmers, black T-shirt, black jeans. "We look different, but inside we're all the same." (37)

Hall estimates that there are only 300 "real Goths" living in Minnesota -- although he says he has no statistical information to back up this claim. He is certain of one thing though: The incident at Red Lake had nothing to do with Goth subculture. "This is a terribly sad story about a very troubled young man. It would be foolish to read any more into it," he said. (38)

An Outpouring of Love

The grieving community of Red Lake, Minnesota is getting advice on coping, from those who have been there before. Two women who attended Columbine High School in Colorado during the 1999 shooting rampage have traveled to the Chippewa reservation to meet with tribal elders, school officials and students. Lauren Beyer Bohn is urging the adults to be good listeners for the teens who are struggling to get back to normal after the shootings.

The 21-year-old survivor says her first instinct after Columbine was to be home schooled. But, then, she says, she decided she wasn't going to be another victim.

In another reminder of Columbine, an Illinois carpenter who'd set up wooden crosses outside the Colorado school has set up nine crosses at Red Lake High School. (39)

White House Initially Silent About Shooting

The *Washington Post* reported on March 25, 2005, that Native Americans across the country, including tribal leaders, academics and rank-and-file tribe members, voiced anger and frustration that President Bush did not respond in a timely fashion to the second-deadliest school shooting in U.S. history. Three days after 16-year-old Jeff Weise killed nine members of his Red Lake tribe before taking his own life, grief-stricken American Indians complained that the White House offered little in the way of sympathy for the tribe situated in the uppermost region of Minnesota.

"From all over the world we are getting letters of condolence, the Red Cross has come, but the so-called Great White Father in Washington hasn't said or done a thing," said Clyde Bellecourt, a Chippewa Indian who is the founder and national director of the American Indian Movement. "When people's children are murdered and others are in the hospital hanging on to life, he should be the first one to offer his condolences. If this was a white community, I don't think he'd have any problem doing that."

White House spokesman Scott McClellan, in an informal discussion with reporters, said: "Our thoughts and prayers are with the families of those who were killed."

"I hope that he would say something," said Victoria Graves, a cultural educator at Red Lake Elementary School on the reservation. "It's important that there's acknowledgment of the tragedy. It's important he sees the tribes are out here. We need help. The reaction to Bush's silence was particularly bitter given his high profile, late-night intervention on behalf of Terri Schiavo, the brain-damaged Florida woman who was caught in a legal battle over whether her feeding tube should be reinserted."

"The fact that Bush preempted his vacation to say something about Ms. Schiavo and here you have 10 native people gunned down and he can't take time to speak is very telling," said David Wilkins, interim chairman of the Department of

American Indian Studies at the University of Minnesota and a member of the North Carolina-based Lumbee tribe.

"He has not been real visible in Indian country," said former senator Ben Nighthorse Campbell (R-Colorado). "He's got a lot of irons in the fire, but this is important."

Even more alarming than Bush's silence, he said, is the president's proposal to cut \$100 million from several Indian programs next year. After hearing grumbling from tribal leaders, Jacqueline Johnson, executive director of the National Congress of American Indians, called the White House to inquire about Bush's silence. "I wanted to make sure the White House is paying attention to this issue," she said. "I wasn't sure."

Asked about Bush's silence, spokeswoman Dana Perino said that he plans to dedicate part of his weekly radio address to the Red Lake tragedy and that he is following the case closely through the FBI and the Justice Department.

The Washington Post further reported that in the hours after the massacre at Columbine High School in Colorado in 1999, President Bill Clinton publicly expressed his condolences and followed up a few days later with a radio address in which he proposed new gun control measures and school safety projects. At the Red Lake Urban Indian Office here, volunteer Marilyn Westbrook said she was disappointed but not surprised.

"I don't feel he cares about the American Indian people," said Westbrook, as she collected donations of gas cards and money to enable fellow Red Lake members to make the 260-mile journey to the reservation. "Why hasn't he made any statements about what happened with this shooting?"

What these Native American leaders do not realize is that President George W. Bush has much more sinister reasons for remaining silent about Satanic crimes reasons which will be made clear in our final chapter.

The Victims Bush Ignored

Daryl Lussier, 58

The grandfather of accused gunman Jeff Weise and one of his first two victims, Lussier was a lifelong tribal police officer known around the reservation by his nickname, Dash.

"If you knew him, you said Dash, and everyone knew who you were talking about," said Ed Naranjo, a retired Bureau of Indian Affairs officer who worked with Lussier.

Lussier had four adult children and two younger than 10, Naranjo said. He helped maintain order during periods of turmoil and unrest on the reservation.

"He was that kind of individual who could calm a very hot situation," Naranjo said. "He just projected that feeling."

Tribal officers were nervous in the late 1980s, Naranjo said, when the tribe switched from Bureau of Indian Affairs protection to contract officers.

"There was that song at the time - 'Don't Worry, Be Happy,'" Naranjo recalled. "Everybody was feeling kind of down, and he would just walk around singing that."

Michelle Sigana, 32

Sigana enjoyed her new job as a cashier at Seven Clans Casino in Thief River Falls, but her real passion was her family.

Killed along with her companion, Daryl Lussier, the Red Lake woman loved spending time with Lussier and their son, Devon, who is in his early teens.

"They just gave him whatever he wanted," said Mark Sigana, a cousin. "For both of them, their priority was making sure he had everything, which he did."

Mark Sigana last saw his cousin a week before the shooting, when she was on her way to Bemidji to shop.

"There was never a dull moment with her," he said. "She was just the happiest person anyone can be around."

Alicia White, 15

White was a lot of fun, the kind of girl who had lots of friends, but things weren't always easy.

"She was really a sweet little girl," said Wendy Johnson, whose daughter, Ashley Morrison, was friends with Alicia. "She never hurt anybody, and had no bad things to say about anything or anyone."

The Redby teenager was the oldest of six children and lived with her grandmother, who was ill. But Alicia kept a cheery demeanor, playing basketball for the freshman team.

"She was nice," said Morrison, a junior. "She was so sweet. I rode the bus with her and I kept asking, 'Why did he shoot her?'"

Pastor Tom Pollock of Redby Community Church said she helped her grandmother raise her younger siblings. "She's really played the role of mother," Pollock said.

Neva Rogers, 62

After Neva Rogers left her teaching job on the Red Lake Indian Reservation, she left for several years. But she returned about six years ago because she felt a strong connection to the community.

And Red Lake residents were happy for that.

"She just made a point when students had personal difficulties to be someone that they could talk to," said her daughter, Cindy Anderson. "And they did."

Rogers, an English instructor, was the adviser to the yearbook and the student newspaper, helping students prepare sports reports and, with spring nearing, profiles of graduating seniors.

Thurlene Stillday, 15

Stillday loved to tell stories.

"She always had something to talk about. You know, 'They did this over the weekend or they did that,'" said Sondra Hegstrom, who was two grades ahead of the freshman. "She had a lot of friends and was happy all the time."

The Ponemah girl came from a big family -- friends say she was one of four girls and a boy - and looked forward to doing good things in high school and beyond.

"She looked up to us because we were upper classmen," Hegstrom said.

THE WOUNDED:

Steven Cobenais, 15

Jo Cobenais was a few rooms down from the classroom where her second cousin, Steven Cobenais, was shot. Steven was treated at a Fargo hospital and recovered from his injuries.

Jo Cobenais said her cousin, three years her junior, was charming and funny. "He always makes me laugh," she said.

Steven Cobenais is the second oldest of four kids, and the only boy. They live with their parents on the reservation, and Jo Cobenais said they're a close-knit family.

"They're always together," Jo Cobenais said.

Ryan Auginash, 14

Auginash has already forgiven the teenager who shot and wounded him.

"He has a good heart," said Ryan's brother, Andrew Auginash. "He forgave the shooter." His brother said he thought the gunman just flipped out. Ryan Auginash was treated at a hospital in Bemidji. He loves music and plays the guitar -- he taught himself, his brother said.

"He's pretty scared and he doesn't know if he wants to go to public school," his brother said.

End Notes

- 1) Maag Chris, "The Devil at Red Lake" *Time Magazine* 4/4/05.
- 2) Red Lake Reservation Home Page: <http://www.redlakenation.org/>
- 3-6) Schmickle, Sharon, "Red Lake Reservation: A troubled history", *Star Tribune* 3/22/05.
- 8) Associated Press 3/25/05.
- 9-19) Maag: 2005.
- 20-24) Associated Press 3/22/05.
- 25-31) Maag: 2005.
- 32-38) Levy, Paul, "Link to Goth Culture Decried" *Star Tribune* 3/24/05.
- 39) NBC 3/25/05.

10

The Blessed Virgin and the Beasts of Satan

According to Roman Catholic theology there will be a final battle of cosmic proportions wherein the forces of good will ultimately triumph over the legions of Hell. This conflict will not go smoothly and even the blessed of Heaven will suffer in this all-or-nothing end-times confrontation. The Apocalypse of Saint John chapter 12 chronicles part of this struggle wherein the Blessed Virgin undergoes a recapitulation of the Birth of Christ and is attacked by Lucifer but is delivered to safety by God:

And there appeared a great wonder in Heaven; a woman clothed with the sun and the moon under her feet, and upon her head a crown of twelve stars: And she being with child cried, travailing in birth, and pained to be delivered.

And there appeared another wonder in Heaven; and behold a great red dragon, having seven heads and ten horns, and seven crowns upon his heads.

And his tail drew the third part of the stars of Heaven, and did cast them to the earth: and the dragon stood before the woman who was ready to be delivered, for to devour her child as soon as it was born.

And she brought forth a man child, who was to rule all nations with a rod of iron: and her child was caught up unto God, and to his throne.

And the woman fled into the wilderness, where she hath a place prepared of God that they should feed her there a thousand two hundred and threescore days.

A young Italian woman was ritualistically murdered because a Satanic cult had become obsessed with the notion that she was the embodiment of the Virgin Mary. In their sick inversion of Catholic theology, members of this Devil worshipping sect sought to symbolically destroy the woman clothed with the sun. In this minor diabolic victory, the Blessed Virgin is butchered by this strange cult who referred to themselves as “the Beasts of Satan”. (1)

Chiara Marino was among up to seven people who investigators believe may have been killed in the Milan, Italy area in the past six years by the Beasts of Satan. Police and prosecutors are now investigating claims by an alleged member of the group that they were acting on orders from more senior Devil worshippers, one of whom was known as “the Antichrist”. Marino’s body was unearthed in a wooded area alongside the corpse of a 16-year-old male. (2)

Investigators have been told the second victim, Fabio Tollis, was killed because he refused at the last minute to take part in Marino's ritual immolation. Forensic

examination demonstrated that the two teenagers had been beaten and stabbed to death. Tollis played in the same black metal band as three of the four men accused of his murder. The others include the alleged ringleader of the Beasts of Satan, a 27-year-old plumber named Nicola Sapone. Nicola, together with another member of the band, was arrested and charged earlier with killing a 27-year-old woman. Investigators believe she may have been murdered after finding out about the brutal double-killing of Tollis and Marino in 1998. (3)

They have also reopened files on the deaths of a further four people. One died of a drug overdose. Another, whom investigators believe took part in the 1998 double-killing, was killed in a road accident. A third was found hanging from an electricity pylon. Yet another was found dead in a burnt-out car. (4)

Mariangela Pezzotta, the young woman killed January 24, 2004 in Golasecca (Varese) had predicted her terrible end: among the entries in her diary, of which long passages were published on the *Il Giorno* daily, there is a sentence that makes one understand that the girl was aware of the risks she was running: “*I know that I will die soon. It's only a matter of time,*” she had written on the page dedicated to September 11, 2000, three years and four months before being massacred by her ex-boyfriend Andrea Volpe. “*He only cares about making me pay.*” The girl recounts how she fell in love with the man who was to become her torturer. Mariangela mentioned how she lived through a relationship filled with beatings and drugs. How, after time, she felt like she was dealing with someone who was very different from how he was at first. (5)

Her diary further speaks of Andrea Ballarin, a friend of Volpe, found hanging from a banister of a school in Somma Lombardo in 2000. This is a suicide that is now considered suspicious and maybe was, in fact, induced. Drugs were Andrea's only aim: “He seems born to get out of his mind. It is as if the adrenalin is exploding in him every time drugs are spoken of.” Mariangela understood how this relationship was ultimately evil: “We are kilometres and kilometres apart. I felt terrible again when I saw that thing being done again.” But she never managed to abandon him, not even when he was in the hospital in serious condition after he overdosed. Instead, she declared it an “eternal love” and despite being aware that he “only used me like a pawn and stole my money, life and psychological peace of mind” she justifies his actions because she knew that he was neglected and abused as a child. (6)

The deeds attributed to Volpe and those accused with him have shocked and riveted Italians, increasingly terrified about the purported growth of satanic cults in this Roman Catholic country. (7) The Beasts of Satan case, whose first defendant went on trial Feb. 21, 2005, and was eventually sentenced to 30 years in prison, represents one of a few gruesome crimes that priests and worried parents cite as proof of a troubled, amoral, young generation turning away from God and toward the occult and, in the extreme, murderous Devil worship. (8)

The Vatican Response

The Vatican was sufficiently concerned to offer special training for priests and novices in Spring 2005. A two-month course at Rome's Regina Apostolorum, a prestigious pontifical university, focused on the history, theology, and sociology of Satanism and black magic, and the healing power of exorcism. "There is a growing interest in satanic cults among youth today," said Carlo Climati, who teaches the course. "They hear it in music, they find it on the Internet. Ten years ago when young people wanted to find out about Satanism, it was difficult. Now it's very easy." (9)

Climati said priests were asking for help in understanding and detecting the malady and combating it after being flooded with entreaties from suspicious parents. "It would be a big mistake to see the devil everywhere. There is no reason to panic," said Climati, who has written extensively on the alienation of youth. "What we are teaching is how to know the language of Satanism, how to identify where [the phenomenon] is, and where it is not." (10)

Under the late Pope John Paul II and the current holder of the Petrine Office, Benedict XVI, the church teaches that the Devil is a real and dangerous presence in society. Furthermore, the Prince of Darkness is very much enshrined in popular Italian culture. Exorcisms are performed routinely in Italy by priests and with the Vatican's blessing. The Italian research institute Eurispes has identified 650 Satanic organizations in Italy, most of them in the northern Lombardy region that includes Milan. Sociologists say northern Italy is probably home to more disaffected youth than southern Italy because the family structure is weaker, eroded by migration and other factors. For good or bad, Milan more closely resembles other European cities, with its urban core, housing projects, intense work pressures and, presumably, more fertile ground for alienation and loneliness. (11)

The course is directed at novices and trainee priests attending the Rome-based Catholic University. With lecturers on a variety of subjects - from demonology to witchcraft, from applied exorcism to canon law and the occult--the course aims to inform priests on everything relating to the Prince of Darkness. (12)

"The idea is to help priests deal with those youths who are attracted by Satanic cults or parents who are concerned that their children might have joined some kind of sect," Professor Carlo Climati, one of the course's lecturers, said in An interview. (13)

Climati, a journalist, author, and expert on youth related issues, blames the growing popularity of Satanism and the occult on a number of factors. These include what he calls new forms of solitude among young people--the isolation born of spending too much time in front of a television set and too little in the

company of friends and relatives, and the growing availability of material now readily available on the Internet. "Once, teenagers' exposure to Satanism was limited to the record sleeve or lyrics of a few rock bands. These days, there are thousands of websites dedicated to Satan," Climati commented. (14)

A Google search of the word "Satanism", for instance, returns 468,000 hits. These include "The Official Web Site of the Church of Satan" and "Satanism Today".

"More generally, the fact that the bad tends to attract more attention than the good goes a long way in explaining the fascination that people hold towards anything evil. One tree falling makes a greater noise than a whole forest growing," says Climati, citing a traditional Chinese proverb. Milan also has a raucous underground heavy metal scene. It was in that milieu, at a club called Midnight, where the Beasts of Satan rock band flourished -- or festered -- and allegedly descended into a hellish crime binge dating back seven years. Volpe, in a bid for leniency, testified for the prosecution. He and seven others, all younger than 30, were tried on murder charges in the killings of three of their friends and in the allegedly forced suicide of a fourth. As the details of the killings emerged an ugly picture of a bizarre Satanic cult emerged. (15)

By his own testimony and a chilling diary he kept, portions of which were leaked to the Italian media, Volpe and his girlfriend, Elisabetta Ballarin, lured his former girlfriend Mariangela Pezzotta, 27, to a remote chalet. High on drugs and alcohol, the pair reportedly shot Pezzotta in the face, then buried her, still alive, in a shallow grave. (Another accomplice allegedly arrived later and killed her with a shovel.) Police eventually arrested Volpe in Pezzotta's death. That's when he agreed to take investigators to the woods near the town of Busto Arsizio, about 25 miles northwest of Milan, where two other victims were buried. (16)

During the summer of 2004, forensic archeologists and police, guided by Volpe, found the bodies of Fabio Tollis, 16, and Chiara Marino, 19. Onetime members of the Beasts of Satan, the two had been missing since 1998 when they were last seen leaving a bar in Milan. Tollis was a singer in the band, but his loyalties to the group apparently came into question, investigators said. The group killed Marino because she had come to personify the Virgin Mary. Lurid details of the case filled newspapers and TV reports: Volpe's penchant for snakes and the number 666, and Marino's use of black candles and goat skulls to decorate her bedroom shocked the general public. (17)

Investigators believe that Volpe and his accomplices used a knife and spade to repeatedly beat and stab the two until they died, then buried them in the 6-foot hole. "It was extremely cold-blooded," said one investigator, who asked not to be identified. "It was overkill." Even though the remains were six years old, the forensic archeologists were able to find the knife, bits of a broken spade, and cloth and leather. Examining the skeletons and tattered clothing, they were able to pinpoint the many wounds in the bones. The physical evidence in the case may be strong, but figuring out what was in the minds of the accused killers, be it a pact with the Devil or something more mundane, may take a lot more doing. The

attorney for at least one of the defendants plans to plead insanity, saying her client was too high on LSD to have known what he was doing.

As the insane Volpe put it in his diary amid references to ritualistic bathing in blood: *"We are wicked individuals. We plague the people and we play with their lives. We know no pity. Pitiless, we will eliminate and cleanse, donating the ash of our enemies to he who sits on the throne."* (18)

So What is Satanism Anyway?

While a simple dictionary definition describes it as "the worship of Satan -- the chief spirit of evil and adversary of God", Professor Climati argues that "Satanism is in fact an extreme form of pessimism. It is a way of seeing the world as a jungle, where only the strongest survive. A world in which all limits are absent, bad examples are on offer and in which the perfection of television's role models is countered with the search for extremes, for power at all costs." (19)

Though the concept of Satan is probably as old as humanity itself, Professor Climati claims the spread of its popularity in the modern world has been in part aided by the emergence of New Age--which a recent Vatican pamphlet describes as an individualistic, egoistic and ultimately anti-Christian culture. Moreover, Satanism cannot merely be confined to the Christian world. (20)

Professor Climati stated that the course has already created enormous interest, both among students in Rome and among those attending the university's branches abroad, particularly in Latin America. While there are no plans to teach students how to deal with the most extreme forms of Satanism --possession by the devil--Climati notes that the course will end with two exorcists sharing their experiences in the lecture room. (21)

"It is a global phenomenon, a human problem that transcends all barriers and which can affect anyone, particularly those with a highly sensitive soul who see their strong ideals betrayed in some way or other," Climati noted. (22)

A Global Phenomenon

Father Climati is correct in asserting that Satanic crime is in the rise. Even a cursory review of articles from court records and news outlets within the last eight years demonstrates how widespread this phenomenon is becoming and what a threat it poses in the new millennium.

April 1989, Harold Glenn Smith v. The State of Texas, No. B14-86-00659-CR, Lexis 794, Conviction for murder affirmed.

Overview: A group tricked one of their friends into accompanying them to a cemetery where they tortured him. A witness testified that Smith compared the

planned murder of his victim with animal sacrifice rituals he had carried out before. The prosecution presented evidence of his satanic belief system.

1989, New York. Monika Beerle, a dancer in New York was dismembered by her boyfriend, Daniel Rakowitz. He was found not guilty by reason of insanity but was sent to a mental institution. In 1992, Randy Charles Easterday, 27, was charged as a participant in the crime.

Reportedly, Monika's boyfriend was involved in a Satanic cult and had served a human finger in soup to homeless people. News reports state, "The group to which Rakowitz and Easterday belonged has been identified by *New York Newsday* as a cult of Devil worshippers who operated out of the Church of the Realized Fantasy. Police sources claimed they butchered her in a ritual sacrifice and a satanic offering." (See, "*New arrest in Swiss dancer slaying raises cult sector.*", UPI, Feb. 18, 1992 and "*Acquitted 'cannibal killer' to stay put*", UPI, Oct. 25, 1995)

November 1989, Gibreville, Gabon. Mba Ntem was found guilty and sentenced to death for murder and leading cannibalism rites.

Overview: Several members of this religious cult were found guilty of aiding in cannibalism ceremonies by serving human flesh to worshippers. A victim's mutilated remains were found in another town, and a photo was published of the high priest with a knife in his teeth and a jar containing pieces of a victim's tongue in his manacled hands. In the ceremony led by Ntem, members of the cult ate the victim's stomach, liver, heart, lungs, tongue and genitals in what their leader called a sacred plate. Some of the worshippers were unaware of the contents, Ntem told the court. The court prohibited other details from being released. The news article states that Animism is a loose religious belief popular in central Africa and other parts of the world that a spirit or force resides in every animate and inanimate object. (See, "*Death Sentence for High Priest in Cannibalism Trial*," *Associated Press*, November 26, 1989.)

December 1988, State of Ohio. v. John L. Fryman, Case No. CA87-10-125, Lexis 5296, Conviction for murder affirmed.

Overview: Fryman took a woman to his sorcery room, where he had erected an altar for satanic worship. He shot her. The next day he cut off the woman's legs above the knees and disposed of them behind an old church. The rest of the body was never found. Fryman claimed that he had killed her because she had insulted him by bringing another magician to his trailer, and that he disposed of her legs behind the church because it was the place he practiced magic. By throwing her legs there he increased the power of that spot.

November 1988, Singapore. Three cult members hanged for murder.

Overview: Adrian Lim, 46, his wife, Tan Mui Choo, 34, and his girlfriend Hoe Kah Hong, 33, were convicted in 1983 of murdering Agnes Ng Siew Heok, eight, and Ghazali Marzuki, 10, in 1981. The three perpetrators belonged to a cult that believed sacrificing children could bring good luck. The three drank the children's blood after suffocating them in a bathtub. Another news report writes that the

macabre ritualistic killings included drinking the children's blood, trances, and electric shock treatments. (See *"Three Singaporeans Hanged for Cult Murder of Children"*, Reuters, November 25, 1988 and *"Three hanged in Singapore for ritual killings"* UPI, Nov 25, 1988)

July 1988, New York, In the Matter of DANIEL "DD" et al., Alleged to be Abused and Neglected Children, 530 N.Y.S.2d 314, July 7, 1988.

Overview: The mother was appealing an order from Family Court finding she had neglected her children. She had allowed visitations to continue between the father and his girlfriend even though she knew that the girlfriend's children had been removed from the home for sexual abuse, and she did not question the situation until the father and girlfriend were arrested on sexual abuse charges. Social Services had investigated the case. All children had been forced by threats of physical abuse to engage in acts of sexual intercourse...among themselves and with adults. In addition, they described participation in forced acts of bestiality, as well as involvement in satanic rituals involving the sacrifice of animals and the drinking of blood. The court cites there was evidence that the mother may have been involved in these activities as well.

August 1986, State of Maine v. Scott Waterhouse. 513 A.2d 862, Murder conviction affirmed.

Overview: Waterhouse was convicted for the murder of a twelve-year-old girl. Evidence of Satanism and excerpts from the Satanic Bible were admitted at trial for purposes of showing motive and intent. During taped conversations with detectives, Waterhouse described his beliefs about sex and destruction rituals.

March 1986, Commonwealth of Massachusetts v. Carl H. Drew, 489 N.E.2d 1233, Murder conviction affirmed.

Overview: Drew was convicted of the first-degree murder of one of his satanic cult members in Fall River. The victim, Karen Marsden, was identified by a portion of the skull, clumps of hair, clothing, and jewelry. Evidence was admitted describing Marsden and another woman who worked for Drew as prostitutes. Another prostitute, Doreen Levesque was killed. According to witness testimony, "The killing was performed as a diabolic ritual during which the soul of Marsden was purportedly given to Satan." Earlier, Marsden had tried to sever her relationship with the cult. Drew threatened to kill her on several occasions, which he finally did. The rest of the coven participated in her ritual murder. Murphy dragged Marsden by the throat and hair into the woods. As she did this, Drew walked alongside while Fletcher and Davis followed close behind. Murphy and the defendant Drew then began striking Marsden with rocks. After further brutalizing Marsden, the defendant ordered Murphy to slit Marsden's throat and Murphy complied. The defendant then tore the head from the body and kicked it. Drew later told another person that he had killed Marsden because "she wanted to leave the cult and that he wanted her to feel pain." The court specifically stated Drew's involvement in Satanism and the victim's desire to leave the cult was evidentially important to detail the context of the crime to the jury, as opposed to viewing the murders as just random acts of violence.

February 1986, Commonwealth of Pennsylvania, v. Frank G. Costal, Jr., 505 A.2d 337, Murder conviction affirmed.

Overview: Expert testimony regarding Satanism and mind control was admitted into the court record to explain the killings of a mother and her four-year-old daughter. The killings appeared to be in retaliation for the mother's interference in a drug deal and homosexual relationship between her husband and Costal. The state submitted evidence that the murders were performed in a ritualistic manner. The victims were stabbed in a similar fashion, in the same pattern. Ceremonial robes, books, posters, plastic skulls and bats, and marriage licenses drawn up by Costal and signed by him as a high priest of Satan were seized from his apartment. A witness testified that Costal told him of attendance at human sacrifices and that 17 was the number of stab wounds required at these ritualistic killings.

Detroit Free Press December 1983

Arzell Jones was convicted of first-degree criminal sexual conduct, single counts of kidnapping and using a firearm during a felony. Linda Greene was convicted of two counts of first-degree criminal sexual conduct.

Overview: Arzell Jones, a private investigator, and Linda Greene, a Detroit policewoman, were convicted of sexually assaulting a 31-year-old woman who was held for more than three days and forced to take part in Satanic rituals. The prosecutor stated the woman was a victim of some "cultism, some ultimate psychological warfare".(See "*Judge Says Victim was Subjected to 'Reign of Terror' Man, Policewoman Guilty of Sexual Assault in Satanic Rituals,*" *Detroit Free Press, December 3, 1983.*)

May 1982, William Smith v. Commonwealth of Massachusetts, 436 N.E.2d 377, Immunity for witness was affirmed.

Overview: William Smith contested immunity for witness who was to testify against him for a murder. The appellate opinion states "these murders were among a series of ritual killings performed in the Fall River area by members of a Satanic cult ...The witness described the ritual that accompanied the murder, and named various participants." The witness also recanted several times before finally testifying.

September 1979, Philippines. A couple was charged with murder for "eating" two brothers..

Overview: Police reported that a couple, whose names were not disclosed, belonged to a sect which believed that cannibalism confers supernatural powers. The brothers were kidnapped from a city 650 miles from Manila. They were allegedly beheaded by members of the sect, then photographs of the beheadings

were taken by a leader of the cult and sent to the widow of one of the victims. Officials stated it took a long time to bring charges because witnesses were too fearful of testifying due to fears of reprisals by the cannibal sect. (*See "A man and his wife have been charged by Philippines police with eating two brothers."* Reuters, September 20, 1979)

BBC November 18, 1997

(Uzbekistan) Police in Uzbekistan say they've arrested five teenaged boys in connection with the desecration of graves at the Christian cemetery in the capital, Tashkent. The police say the five were part of a Satanist sect which allegedly wrecked more than a hundred graves in a raid about two weeks ago.

It's very rare for the Uzbek authorities to acknowledge any sort of unruly behavior in this tightly controlled society, and it's possible they may have gone public to try to stop rumors of friction in this mainly Muslim city. From Tashkent, Monica Whitlock reports:

"Tashkent was once renowned as a cosmopolitan capital. Armenians, Greeks, Poles, many Christians lived here, as well as countless Orthodox Russians. All buried their dead at this cemetery. Word seeped out some days ago that vandals had broken in by night and wrecked more than a hundred graves. Now, police say they've caught part of a Satanist sect, and are close to rounding up the whole group. Society here is tightly controlled. Any hint of untoward or rowdy behavior is kept out of the news. This time, the authorities have taken the unusual step of going public, possibly to scotch rumors of friction between Russians and Uzbeks who are Muslims. Several state newspapers printed the boys' names, all of which are Slavic. The head of the Orthodox Church in Tashkent, Archbishop Vladimir, said the boys were hooligans and that the incident had no bearing on Orthodox-Muslim relations. Tens of thousands of Russians have left Tashkent since Uzbekistan became an independent country six years ago. Many of those who remain worry about their future in what is now a mainly Uzbek city. Open antagonism is rare, but there are sometimes tensions over issues like jobs. Walking round the cemetery is a poignant experience. So many Christian families have gone that the graves are often unkempt and broken. The wardens say it's hard to know where the wreckers have been."

BBC January 10, 1999

(Finland) A bizarre murder case involving teenage members of a Satanist cult is making sensational headlines in Finland.

Teenage Satanism sounds like some new fad dreamed up by bored sixteen-year olds over a couple of beers just to annoy their parents. But in Scandinavia, Satanism is becoming less and less of a joke.

In Norway alone during the past couple of years, young Satanists have been suspected, and one or two convicted, of burning down perhaps half a dozen of the nation's oldest and most beautiful churches.

Others with links to the fast-growing neo-Nazi movement have been involved in violent attacks on immigrants and refugees.

Now a murder case in neighboring Finland has cast a new and even more sinister light on the Satanist movement.

Four young people, a seventeen-year-old girl and three men aged sixteen to twenty-three -- have confessed to killing one of their associates. Only a few of their victim's body parts have been found.

Helsinki police are investigating other unsolved murders in the vicinity, including that of a dog which was found dismembered in the same flat as the latest human victim. The police say they are taking seriously the possibility that the murders were connected to cannibalistic rituals -- a recurring theme on internet sites and in some of the heavy metal music favored by Satanists.

Associated Press, Aug. 29, 2004

Vandals who authorities said belonged to a sect of Satanists desecrated about 30 graves at a Serbian Orthodox cemetery in central Serbia, the *Glas Javnosti* daily reported today.

Gravestones and crosses as well as several graveside statues were smashed and uprooted before dawn at the cemetery in Kragujevac, a town 90km southeast of Belgrade, the newspaper said.

The crosses were dug out and left scattered near the graves or stuck into the ground upside down in what investigative judge Zoran Arsenijevic told reporters was an apparent "Satanic ritual."

"We also discovered Satanic symbols and signs painted all over the place," the newspaper quoted Mr. Arsenijevic as saying.

The police said an intense investigation had been launched.

It was the second incident of vandalism attributed to Satanism this month at the Kragujevac cemetery. First he got beaten and called a Devil worshiper. Now the Church of Satan, which Daniel Romano says he has been a member of for two years, denies knowing him. "They deny knowing me because they don't want the press," said Romano, who was pounded Sunday with an ice scraper and metal pipe near his Maspeth home.

Romano, 20, who spent time hiding in a bagel store in an effort to dodge a TV news crew in his neighborhood, said that as a card-carrying member of the Church of Satan, he avidly reads the *Satanic Bible* and attends secret meetings.

But the high priest of the Manhattan-based church wondered just who Romano is. "I don't know the guy," said High Priest Peter Gilmore, the church's leader. "I can't vouch if he is a Satanist or not. He might be somebody that's out for publicity. Anybody who says he's a Satanist, and is not a member, we don't support," Gilmore added. "How can we? There are a lot of crazy people out there."

Canadian Press, Feb. 3, 2005

RCMP and the parents of a missing Richmond, British Columbia, teenager are concerned there may be a Satanic connection to her disappearance.

Josephine Shih, 16, vanished January 25 with nothing but the clothes on her back and \$1,200 cash from her parents' home. "Please help us," her father Steven begged during a news conference as her mother sat quietly beside him with tears streaming down her face. "She connected with some very strange websites (that gave) her the wrong idea."

RCMP Cpl. Peter Thiessen said an examination of the family computer showed Josephine frequented Internet sites about satanic cults and corresponded in chat rooms.

Thiessen said she may have been lured away by someone connected to the Satanic websites:

"A number of things point that way," Thiessen said. "We would love to be wrong, but we don't know."

He said there is real concern that some harm may come to the young woman, noting a case last year that had similar links.

"We've seen this in the past in other forms. Two people died," he said, referring to last October's disappearance of a Vancouver couple.

Rachel Adams and Mark Remple hanged themselves near Lion's Bay, north of Vancouver. They were known to be involved in so-called Goth culture.

"Frankly, to be honest with you, I don't know the difference between Satanic, Goth, it's all to me the same," Thiessen said.

Her father said Josephine was a good student, but after the winter break at school her attitude changed and she wasn't studying.

"My wife, she can't sleep, we're very worried about her," he said.

The teen is five-foot-five and weighs about 165 pounds. She has a large scar on the back of her neck.

The Shih family moved to Canada from Taiwan seven years ago and also has a four-year-old daughter.

The family's computer is with the RCMP technical crime unit where an expert is looking for links to where the teenager could be.

Thiessen said there was some indication the girl may have tried to cross into the United States, but she had no identification.

"Our officers have been working on it every day, all day . . . sending out information outside the province, the borders, the airlines, a wide variety of agencies are involved."

BBC 23/01/2004

(Italy) They believe a cult may have ordered the killing of eight couples between 1968 and 1985 and kept some body parts.

Farm worker Pietro Pacciani, dubbed the Monster of Florence, was convicted of the crimes in 1994 but later released on the basis of flaws in the evidence.

Following new evidence, a pharmacist and three other Florentine professionals are being questioned.

Witness reports of female genitalia and body parts in the fridge of a Tuscan villa linked to a suspected Satanist led police to reopen the case.

The villa had been rented by a doctor thought to have drowned in a lake in 1985 according to Reuters news agency.

The man, who police now think was murdered, is suspected of having been part of a Satanic group who ordered Pacciani and two accomplices to carry out the killings.

"The eight double homicides were carried out according to a criminal plan on two levels," a judicial source told Reuters.

"The execution was entrusted to [Pacciani and his friends] but a group of people who celebrated rituals and black magic put the arms in their hands."

Pacciani died in 1998, two years after his release on appeal and while he was facing a retrial, whilst the two other men were convicted of aiding him.

The Guardian newspaper says two previous independent investigations suggested an occult link to the murders.

The victims were shot during romantic trysts in the Tuscan countryside and many suffered sexual mutilations.

Police investigating the 60-year-old pharmacist seized pornographic material from his home. His lawyer told the Guardian he did not believe his client had anything to do with the killings.

A dermatologist, a businessman and a lawyer from Florence were also being questioned.

The trial of Pacciani, who was given sixteen life sentences, was attended by *Silence of the Lambs* author Thomas Harris, who was fascinated by the case.

The fruits of his research in the Chianti region appear in *Hannibal*, with references to "*Il Mostro*".

Pacciani died in 1998 at the age of 73 before a retrial.

BBC 31 January 2002

A German couple who killed a man by stabbing him 66 times in a Satanic ritual has been jailed for murder at the end of a trial that has horrified and fascinated the country. Daniel and Manuela Ruda never denied killing their victim, but argued it was not murder because they were acting on the Devil's orders.

They received sentences of fifteen and thirteen years respectively in a secure psychiatric ward.

The decomposing body of the dead man, Frank Haagen, was found in the couple's flat in July with a scalpel protruding from his stomach and the sign of the Devil carved into his chest.

The couple was arrested a week later.

The presiding judge, Arnjo Kerstingombroke, stipulated that the couple should receive therapy in jail, to ensure that they never repeated their crime.

The defense had called for acquittal on the grounds that the couple was mentally unfit, but the sentences were one year longer, in each case, than the prosecution had requested.

The couple have shown no remorse for their crime and shocked the court with their extrovert behavior, striking defiant poses for photographers.

Experts told the court in Bochum, in Germany's western Ruhr region, that they were suffering from severe narcissistic personality disturbances.

Accounts of the gruesome killing, in a room full of human skulls, cemetery lights, and a coffin in which Manuela slept, have been given detailed coverage in the German media.

Manuela Ruda, aged twenty-three, told the court that Satan had called her when she was fourteen.

She said she shunned strong light and had become involved in vampirism at "bite parties" in London.

She and Daniel, aged twenty-six, said they attempted suicide during several days on the run after killing their victim, who worked with Daniel selling car parts. Daniel also bought a chainsaw, saying he did not want to be empty-handed when the Devil called again.

BBC 31 August, 2001

Germany has been traumatized by the death of three teenagers with links to Satanism who committed suicide by jumping off a bridge in the east of the country. The full circumstances remain a mystery, but the incident has fueled fears that young people may be ending their lives after taking part in "death chats" on the internet. The latest incident occurred overnight between 25 and 26 August, when the youngsters jumped from a bridge already infamous for suicides - the 78meter-high Goeltzschtal Bridge near Reichenbach.

The three boys aged fourteen, seventeen, and eighteen, lived in Reichenbach, in what was formerly East Germany. The youngest and the oldest had their feet tied. It is known that all three had connections with Satanism, but they were apparently not full-blown members of any particular satanic sect. A collective suicide is considered "untypical" in Satanist circles. It has been proved that neither drugs nor alcohol were involved. Vague hints to the motive of the suicide were contained in a death note found at the foot of the bridge.

The three boys were unhappy with their lives, they had realized that their life dreams and plans were not going to come true, says the letter.

The Goeltzschtal Bridge is the tallest brick bridge in the world. It was built in the pioneer days of the railway age and was then, 150 years ago, seen as a miracle of technology. But it has attracted countless suicides over the years--nobody knows their exact number.

It is part of the school curriculum in this region to warn pupils of the bridge's fatal dangers, warning signs have been installed on it, and police patrol it in regular intervals. A few years ago, some killers tried to make a murder look like suicide here. They placed the corpse at the foot of the bridge, leading the police automatically to assumed suicide.

It was only by a fluke that they ended up on the right track, and the killers were caught.

Saxony's State Premier, Kurt Biedenkopf, has called for an investigation to find out what kind of destructive force had influenced the three youngsters.

Experts point out that more and more young people are interested in Satanism. Satanism, they say, is often used as a way of defying the adult world, and a last resort for people who see no chance to be successful in real life.

Some maintain that this is a particular problem for people in eastern Germany who have lost all sense of security and stability in life after the fall of communism. Estimates speak of a hardcore of between 3,000 and 8,000 followers in Germany. They use emblems like pentagrams and turned-up crosses, but increasingly also Nazi symbols.

Satanic murders from time to time hit the headlines, like one a few weeks ago in the Ruhr area of western Germany, or the one in the town of Sondershausen in 1993 when three young boys known to be Satanists killed a 15-year-old.

One of the killers, a Satanist and Neo-Nazi, later asked for political asylum in the US. He was recently deported back to Germany.

A new way of communication among suicidal people and a cause for grave concern with the authorities are what experts call "death chats" in the internet. Those chat rooms are used to exchange views on the miseries of life and how to end it.

The German Protestant church believes that some of those chat rooms are being turned into virtual death sects.

Associated Press April 10, 2001

The specter of witchcraft emerged in a murder case stemming from the discovery of a Las Vegas woman's remains in a sealed barrel. An investigator said the "Satanic Bible" and "The Geography of Witchcraft" were found with the trash barrel in a storage shed.

The revelation prompted Brookey Lee West's lawyer to deny that West is a witch, a Satanist or a killer - or that the literature had anything to do with the death of West's 68-year-old mother, Christine M. Smith.

"We had witch hunts in Salem several hundred years ago," Clark County Deputy Public Defender Scott Coffee said after a Monday hearing in Las Vegas Justice Court. "This shouldn't turn into one."

Justice of the Peace William Jansen will decide if there is enough evidence to bind West over for trial on a murder charge. The preliminary hearing, which began Monday, is scheduled to resume Thursday.

The body was discovered Feb. 5, when customers noticed a foul smell at a storage unit rented by West, 47.

William Unruh, storage business manager, tried unsuccessfully to contact West before cutting the lock and rolling back the door.

"That's when the smell hit us," Unruh testified. "I said, 'This one's not for us. This one's for the police.'"

Police officers found a 56-gallon trashcan, boxes and other items inside the unit. West's fingerprint was found on tape sealing the barrel.

Joseph Matvay, a Las Vegas police crime scene analyst, said Smith's bones and putrefied remains were found inside. Smith had last been seen at her nearby apartment in February 1998.

Clark County Medical Examiner Gary Telgenhoff testified that a plastic bag was tied around the skeleton's face and nose, but there wasn't enough tissue intact to say how Smith died.

Telgenhoff couldn't say whether Smith was dead before she was placed in the barrel.

Under questioning from Coffee, Matvay acknowledged that a traditional Bible and a book called "Jews For Jesus" also were found at the scene.

In another twist, it was revealed that Smith isn't the first family member of West's to die suspiciously.

One of her ex-husbands, Howard Simon St. John, was found shot to death in Tulare

County, Calif., on June 6, 1994.

WorldNetDaily March 11, 2006

While the "all-American college boys" arrested for a series of church arsons claimed they had committed their crimes for the fun of it - with no religious or political motivation - new reports from friends say the students dabbled in the occult and Satanism.

Benjamin Moseley and Russell DeBusk, 19, were theater students at Birmingham Southern College. Matthew Cloyd, 20, lived in the same dorm as DeBusk, an academic overachiever and son of a doctor

Less enthralled with fame and film, Matthew Cloyd, 20, hooked up with the others when he and DeBusk lived in the same dorm.

An academic standout, Cloyd grew up a doctor's son in Shelby County. His true love was deer hunting. But hunting was intertwined with alcohol, and a rebellious anger crept into Cloyd's personality.

Cloyd wrote to Moseley last summer, as the two planned a road trip: "Let us defy the very morals of society instilled upon us by our parents, our relatives and of course Jesus."

End Notes

1-3) Hooper John, "Italian murders 'the work of Satanists'" *Guardian* 5/8/04.

4-22) Wilkinson, Tracy "Italy's 'Beasts of Satan' Face Murder Trial" 1/30/05.

11

Murder in the Cathedral

On Saturday, July 24, 2004 a Roman Catholic priest named Father Faustino Gazziero (de Stefani), 69, was ritually murdered immediately after celebrating mass in the Metropolitan Cathedral of Santiago, Chile. As he walked down the altar toward the vestry, still gripping the sacred chalice, he was attacked and decapitated by a 25-year-old Devil worshiper and black metal music fanatic named Rodrigo Orias (Gallardo). According to witnesses, Orias, dressed in black and armed with a knife, cried out “Satan!” as he leaped upon Fr. Gazziero and slit his throat. He kept cutting until the elderly curate’s head lobbed off. Fr. Bernardino Zanella, the vicar responsible for the Servites in Santiago, told the Missionary Service News Agency, “A brother who was present in the cathedral told us that after killing Father Faustino, the youth knelt down by his side invoking Satan's name.” Father Zanella also stated that Orias did not know Fr. Faustino and that he attacked the priest because he was “inspired by the madness of Satanic groups.” This tragic event rocked Chile. (1)

After the immolation, the knife-wielding Satanist smeared his face with the victim's blood and then stabbed himself several times on his upper body. When police arrived and made their way through the hysterical crowd, they found Orias smearing more of the fallen priest’s blood on his face and chanting hymns to Lucifer. Colonel Hector Henriquez head of the Santiago Police said the young Satanist was not affected by drugs or alcohol at the time of the human sacrifice, and was completely lucid. Orias was rushed to an emergency room where he was quickly sent to surgery for his self-inflicted gashes. He recovered and during his arraignment confessed to having Satanic inclinations, according to police and church reports. (2)

Fr. Gazziero had gone to Chile after his ordination in 1960, where he became president of the St. Teresa Foundation, which administers various schools in the country. He was laid to rest a few days later in the very cathedral where he was martyred for his faith. People queued for hours to pay their respects to Padre Faustino Gazziero De Stefani, whose body lay in an open coffin just a few steps from where he died. (3)

Among the mourners was noted artist Jessica Nunez who said Chile had never witnessed such violence in a place of worship. The first time that it happened in Chile is very hard for us,” she said. “You would think this could never happen at the church, least of all for a priest. It is terrible.” (4)

Although this murder received hardly any coverage outside of Latin America, Chileans see this as a direct attack on the Church and their way of life. The Chilean media is said to be in shock over the incident and has focused on finding a connection between the killing of Father Gazziero and Orias' devotion to black

metal bands like Dark Funeral and Marduk. Several recent TV programs have featured discussions about sects, Satan, and Satanic metal, generating the kind of media frenzy unseen in Chile since the Church banned Iron Maiden from performing in Santiago almost a decade ago due to the band's sinister intent and overtones. (5)

Orias, who had a pentagram branded on the left side of his chest (covering his heart) and several other Satanic symbols tattooed on his body reportedly asked Dark Funeral singer Emperor Magus Caligula during the Swedish black metal band's visit to Santiago last year to burn an inverted cross on Rodrigo's arm with a cigar, a mark which he later planned to make into a tattoo. (6)

Several churches in Chile have been vandalized and others have received anonymous letters and phone calls threatening to kill more priests. (7)

Father Bernardino Zanella, the vicar responsible for the Servites in Santiago, told the Missionary Service News Agency that the phenomenon of Satanism in Chile, as in other countries of the world, is growing strongly. Numerous groups are active in the country, especially in the cities, although in recent years their presence has also spread to minor urban centers. (8) To date, these groups had limited themselves to desecrate and commit acts of vandalism in sacred places and cemeteries, but it never happened that they attacked persons, he added. (9)

The Desecration of Cathedral

Eight days after the ritual murder, a group of Satanists vandalized the Cathedral of Linares in Chile, drawing satanic symbols on the walls and pouring red paint over the main altar, according to police in this city located 170 miles south of Santiago. The unknown group painted inverted crosses and wrote the number six in three different areas of the Cathedral walls. The events serve as reminders that Satanism is all too real and raise questions about how widespread Satanic groups are, how and why young people get involved, what parents can do, and how youths can be saved. (10)

Father Gabriel Amorth has been the exorcist for the Diocese of Rome for the past eighteen years. He says one of the main ways young people get involved is through dance clubs. "I don't want to generalize, but first you see them get involved with alcohol, then drugs, then sex. And then Satanism." (11)

Father Amorth said that whenever he talks to parents, the first thing he tells them is not to give their children money. "If kids have everything, they do not develop the habit of sacrifice, the value of obligation or responsibility. They become discontented with life and seek adventure to fill this emptiness. Above all, it leads them to drugs." (12)

"The most important thing that parents can do is give their children ideals and values," he said. "We used to see God as the head of the household. Now, kids

don't believe in God. They abandon the faith. They do not know what patriotism is.” (13)

Father Amorth also pointed to the high incidence of broken families in Italy as a factor which contributes to youths getting involved in Satanic cults:

The Devil is very pleased with that, since this gives him free reign to do his work. The Church went from one excess to another. Yesterday, it was the obsessive witch hunt that instead of exorcizing them, burned them; today, she has abandoned everything: devils and exorcists. The result is that there is not a single exorcist in entire Catholic areas of various countries: Spain, Portugal, Germany, Austria and Switzerland. I admire the Italian Bishops. They don't understand anything, but at least they have named exorcists. Last year we had a meeting: we were 170 exorcists.

They, like all the priests, also studied in seminaries. And for some time the seminaries have no longer been teaching on angels and devils, nothing on exorcism, nothing on the sins against the First Commandment. “You shall not have false gods before Me” - which means the condemnation of Magic, Spiritism, Satanism.

The same incompetence. It issued a new ritual that is a disaster for us exorcists. It forbids us to perform exorcisms in cases of spells, when it is known that 90 percent of the cases of possession come from them. It also forbids us to make an exorcism if we don't have a prior certainty that there is a diabolic action, but we only can acquire this certainty by carrying out an exorcism. We are lucky that the old ritual continues to be valid. I use it; otherwise I would have to quit my job.

For me, this impressive Italian case is no less grave than the ritual killing of Sharon Tate by Charles Manson and his group. In view of it, my commentary is this: Vatican II declared that there were no longer heretics, but only “separated brethren.” Along this line the Conciliar Church indulges voodoo sects and avoids serious combats against the Devil, this “separated angel.” We are seeing that Satan himself is taking advantage of this accommodating tolerance to spread his cult ever more broadly, with rituals that often involve the most macabre violence. (14)

The Archbishop of Mexico City, Cardinal Norberto Rivera Carrera, inaugurated the first National Meeting of Exorcists in 2004 as a means of combating the spread of Satanism. Among those participating in the event is Fr. Gabriel Amorth, founder of the International Association of Exorcists. (15)

Addressing the more than 500 participants, including exorcist priests from various dioceses in the country and from around the world, the Cardinal emphasized that this was a crucial moment for the Church and that the Church must denounce with the Word everything that is against God, particularly witchcraft, occultism, magic, fortune telling, tarot cards and masonry, among other things. (16)

The meeting included conferences, panels and roundtable discussions by experts such as Fr. Giancarlo Gramolazzo, President of the International Association of

Exorcists, and Fr. Mario Angel Flores Ramos, Director of Theology Department of the Pontifical University of Mexico. (17)

In his homily during the inaugural Mass, the Cardinal warned that something even more relevant is that, in certain cities of the world, Satanic cult worship is taking place and the reality of our times also includes Satanic works such as the New Age, which attempts to attract people with false ways of thinking and living. (18)

According to the Cardinal, the New Age proposes believing not in a personal God who has revealed Himself to us, but in an impersonal god who identifies himself with this material world of which we are part, in an attempt to make us believe that we ourselves are God. Some seek to solve their problems, sicknesses, and pain and suffering by following an unreal and superficial path without establishing a personal relationship with God, he added. (19)

Lastly, he called on participants to make Christ their center, “who through his passion, death and resurrection, through the cross, triumphed over Satan, and offers Himself to us through bread and wine in the Eucharist, so that united to Him we might participate in His victory, together with Mary, star of the Evangelization, principal cooperator with Christ in the work of redemption and in crushing the head of the serpent and his seed.” (20)

Father Mitch Pacwa, a Jesuit priest and host for a series on EWTN, believes that another major factor is the desire for friendship. “There are some kids who are kind of misfits,” he said. “They feel different from the rest. Other kids don't like them, which adds to the problem. Somebody from a Satanic group will seek them out and recruit them.” (21)

The desire for friendship is so strong, Father Pacwa said, that these youths are amazed that anyone is even paying attention to them when they are recruited. (22) One of the most dangerous cases is when an adult recruits an adolescent. “If an older woman befriends an adolescent boy, which is not unusual, she seduces him,” Father Pacwa said.

“What usually happens is that the seductive partner says, 'I know you like what we did. I have photographs to prove it.' She blackmails him. Then, the group will up the ante. And say, 'Okay, now let's kill a cat.' And it goes on from there.” (23)

In other cases, young people will form groups and invent Satanic practices. “They are making it up as they go along,” Father Pacwa said. “They don't know anything about it. These are cult want-to-be's, which has its own dangers. They begin to dare each other to do things.” (24)

Nobody really knows how widespread Satanic sects are because of the secretive nature of these groups. Father Amorth believes the phenomenon is growing in Italy, though he could not give any statistics. “These groups get together and disband very easily,” he said. “They are usually very small groups.” Father Bernardino Zanello, vicar general for the Servants of Mary Order in Santiago,

where Father Gazziero served, said there are more than eighty Satanic groups in Chile that have been identified by officials. (25)

One characteristic of these groups is their tendency to glorify themselves. "They try to make themselves look more fearful than they are," Father Pacwa said. "Their point is to try to shock and attack the basic faith of their parents in God." Father Pacwa likened these groups to street gangs. "I used to work with street gangs, who had similar delusions of grandeur. These kids really believed they were protecting their neighborhoods. St. Ignatius Loyola says that Satan uses pride. Once people succumb to pride, other sins begin to fall into place. There are many signs that parents should look for: a sudden drop in grades, a fascination with the occult and drug use." (26)

"...Parents have this foolish idea that their kids' rooms are their own space," said Father Pacwa. "That's foolish! It's their house. Check it out. Are there drugs going on? Is there evidence of sexual behavior -- especially with an adult, which is criminal behavior?"... The most important advice for parents, according to Father Mitch Pacwa, is to know their child's heart. (27)

"You know when your own children lie," he said. "When you see off behavior, catch it early on. Ask them: 'What's in your heart?' Hang out with them. Go for a walk. They will talk to you. Do this on a regular basis. It will help preclude this kind of stuff." (28)

"Once youths become involved in Satanic groups, it becomes difficult to leave. It is important that the youths involved want to leave. Spiritual direction is needed, as well as prayer by loved ones. Parents must help their children realize how harmful these activities can be." (29)

As for the aftermath of these tragedies, investigations continue in Chile and in Italy. Father Zanella believes that, for the good of society, a thorough investigation must take place. "I think we must understand these groups," he said. "We cannot confuse things, because the reality is complex. What does this mean for society? Why are these things happening? The problem needs to be confronted. We need to give our youths more ideals." (30)

Father Pacwa remains optimistic about the problem. "In the first epistle of St. John, chapter four, verse four, it says: 'For there is one greater in you than in the world.' It is very important for us to have this sense. This must be the basis from which we act. Believe me, I don't go looking for the forces of evil, but I don't worry about being overly afraid." (31)

Satanists who Pose as Catholic Priests

Padre Mitchell Pacwa's upbeat take on the Satanic problem in the world is quite ironic considering that the Catholic priesthood is run amok with covert Devil worshipers. As pointed out in my book *Lucifer's Lodge: Satanic Ritual Abuse in the Catholic Church* (2004) the Church of Rome has been infiltrated by Satanists

who pose as Catholic priests and rape women and children. While Padre Mitch makes trite lighthearted bingo jokes on his nightly EWTN show, perverts and Devil worshipers enjoy the protection of the Vatican. Padre Mitch is quite pathetic. His smug smile and confident radiance while proffering Sunday school theology during the entire priest pedophile scandal is perhaps the biggest case of “whistling in the dark” religious broadcasting has ever seen. EWTN barely covered the priest pedophile cases and Padre Pacwa had the nerve to continually assert that the “church was under attack” as more and more cases of clergy sex abuse splashed across the front pages of every newspaper in the USA and around the globe.

Padre Pacwa gave up a golden opportunity to have the Church come clean over all of its past injustices concerning the transferring of deviant priests. Instead, he chose to avoid the subject and focus on the “sassiness” of the brain-damaged stroke victim Mother Angelica and to swap witticisms with the decrepit Franciscan Benedict Groschel. In fact, much of the recent “concern” over the rise of Satanism covered above is merely a smoke screen which hides the wicked activities of degenerate priests.

While Padre Pacwa hung-up on callers to his show who mentioned the pedophile priest crisis, EWTN had a child molesting priest on its staff who said Mass regularly at the Catholic network’s Alabama studios. Padre Pacwa was well aware that Fr. Real Bourque -- who hosted an EWTN radio program - was a notorious child molester who had been transferred from the Boston Archdiocese to EWTN to avoid legal cases from former victims. This is typical of the hypocrisy and lies which has over-run the Church of Rome.

Another case in point is that of Father Gerald Robinson, whose sick career was touched upon in *Lucifer’s Lodge* but whose vile activities have captured the attention of Pulitzer Prize winners Mike Sallah and Mitch Weiss of *The Toledo Blade*. Robinson is perhaps the most overt example of a Satanist posing as a Catholic priest in the history of the Church of Rome.

Reviewing his case in detail will benefit in understanding this strange phenomenon of Devil worshipers who are also Roman Catholic priests. Robinson murdered a nun named Sister Margaret Ann Pahl, leaving her in his chapel wrapped in an altar clothe with an arch of candles surrounding her head. Padre Pacwa will never report about Catholic priests like Robinson. I draw directly from the news reports of the Pulitzer Prize winning team of Sallah and Weiss which recently appeared in *The Toledo Blade*.

For the Toledo police, it was a rare assignment: search an abandoned house on the edge of a cornfield in western Lucas County where people reportedly took part in ritual abuse ceremonies. The detectives combed the bedrooms, kitchen, and even the dark basement for evidence of cult gatherings. The search of the decrepit, wood structure last year was a sign the investigation of the Rev. Gerald Robinson was moving beyond a murder case. No longer was the probe focusing solely on the man accused of killing Sister Margaret Ann Pahl, but was expanding into a new direction: accusations that children were molested and raped by priests in ritual services. (32)

Police have embarked on one of the most unusual investigations in the department's history, spurred by leads emerging after the priest's arrest for the killing in the Mercy Hospital chapel more than 24 years ago. They have looked for evidence in church attics and basements and have consulted with religious experts on subversive groups and church history. They have even interviewed the founder of a secret fraternity of Catholic whose members dressed in weird nuns' clothing. (33)

"The police are going into areas they've never gone before," said David Davidson, one of the first police officers to respond to the slaying in 1980. "They don't have a choice." (34)

The investigation started with the details of the crime scene: an aging nun found strangled and repeatedly stabbed in the sacristy of the hospital chapel, her body posed to look like she was sexually assaulted. But now, deeper issues have surfaced over accusations of sexual abuse of children in churches and schools by priests and lay members beginning in the late 1960s. Prosecutors and defense lawyers refuse to answer questions about the investigation, citing a judge's gag order. (35)

The priest's trial opened on October 17, 2005 in Lucas County Common Pleas Court in what was one of the most watched trials in local history. The 66-year-old cleric has pleaded not guilty, with supporters and relatives pledging their homes to help post a \$400,000 bond. An investigation by *The Toledo Blade* based on hundreds of police and diocese records, as well as interviews, shows that prosecutors closely examined details of the slaying -- including a pattern of stab wounds resembling a cross -- while interviewing people about the abuse allegations in an expanded probe. (36)

Investigators talked to numerous priests and former students at local Catholic grade schools to determine if they knew anything about children being molested in bizarre ceremonies involving a small ring of clerics, according to several people interviewed by police. Four women told detectives about being abused between the late 1960s and 1986 during cult-like ceremonies involving altars and men dressed in robes, the accusers told *The Blade*. "I've had nightmares about this since I was a child," said one woman, who asked not to be named. "I didn't think anyone would believe me." (37)

The reopening of the Sister Pahl homicide investigation didn't start with DNA findings or even a tip. It began with a secret hearing in the downtown headquarters of the Toledo Catholic diocese unrelated to the nun's death. A 41-year-old woman appeared before a church review board in June 2003 with a simple request: She wanted the diocese to pay for more than \$50,000 in counseling costs she incurred as an alleged victim of clerical sex abuse. But her story wasn't like dozens of others exploding in the diocese over the last decade. She said she had been a victim of ritualistic sexual abuse by a group of transsexual, satanic priests. (38)

She claimed they gathered in church basements and rectories in cult-like ceremonies, where children were molested and ordered to watch other youngsters being abused. She named four clerics, including Chet Warren, a former Oblates of St. Francis de Sales priest ousted from his order in 1993 after five other women accused him of sexual misconduct. She claimed Father Warren had orchestrated her repeated abuse, including arranging one encounter with Father Robinson. (39)

The diocese hired two retired police officers, John Connors, 65, and Lawrence Knannlein, 63, to look into the woman's accusations in an unprecedented church investigation. Over the course of nine months, they interviewed more than 45 people, including priests, nuns, and lay members. They spent more than 17 hours with the woman, who described her allegations in detail, claiming the sexual assaults began during her preschool years in the 1960s, usually at night with altars, candles, and chanting. (40)

Her most persistent abuser, she said, was Father Warren, a family friend who was counseling her mother for depression. Mr. Warren did not respond to requests for an interview, and his lawyer, Martin Mohler, declined to comment. The accuser said her only sexual encounter with Father Robinson took place when she was fourteen in a room not far from the chapel of St. Vincent Mercy Medical Center but without any of the rituals that occurred in other sessions. (41)

The priest's lawyer, Alan Konop, said Father Robinson would not comment on the allegation. Mr. Connors said he initially was stunned by the accusations. "I had conducted a lot of different investigations for the diocese going back a lot of years, but this was the first time I had ever heard these kinds of stories," he recalled. (42)

At the diocese headquarters, the review board debated what to do with the case in what became a growing controversy in the church. The review panel was created to evaluate abuse claims and make recommendations to the bishop. One board member, psychologist Robert Cooley, argued the woman's story should be reported immediately to police. But church lawyer Thomas Pletz wrote a letter to diocese case manager Frank DiLallo on June 12, 2003, saying board members were not required to do so. After further debate, Mr. Pletz wrote a letter on June 27 to Frank Link, chairman of the review board, saying the woman's allegations had been forwarded to the Lucas County prosecutor's office. (43)

For the next six months, the case languished, but behind the scene, a local clerical abuse support group pressed the Ohio attorney general's office to look into the complaint. State agents in turn urged the Lucas County prosecutor's office to investigate. By the end of the year, Prosecutor Julia Bates agreed, assigning investigators to meet with the woman. While evaluating her complaint, they recognized one name - Father Robinson - from an unsolved slaying in 1980. Then the chaplain at Mercy Hospital, Father Robinson was questioned several times in 1980 about Sister Pahl's death. But police said at the time no one was charged because there wasn't enough evidence.

In early 2004, prosecutors began to take another look at one of Toledo's most high-profile unsolved homicides. They hired experts to conduct a battery of

scientific tests on the original evidence, including a letter opener that police believe was used in the slaying of Sister Pahl. The shiny, long opener with a medallion at the top had been in police storage since it was taken from Father Robinson's room in the hospital after the killing. Police went to experts to study the blood patterns on an altar cloth and other objects from the crime scene. They also listened to the priest's taped interviews with detectives in 1980. (44)

On April 23, 2004, prosecutors said there was enough evidence to charge Father Robinson with murder, and shortly after taking him into custody, investigators added one more detail in interviews with reporters: The death appeared to be a ritual slaying. The disclosure triggered a media frenzy, with reporters descending on Toledo from the national networks and tabloids. But even after the arrest, police weren't finished. There were still unresolved questions surrounding the sex abuse accusations against other clerics. The more pressing question: Was Father Robinson involved?

Police launched their own investigation into the woman's dark accusations. They looked at a remote, abandoned home on Raab Road in western Lucas County that matched the description of a house where the woman said she was raped in group sessions in the late 1970s but were unable to find any evidence the house was used for ritual sex sessions. Detectives tracked down another woman who said she was ritually abused by the same clerics in similar scenarios, though the accusers did not know each other. Teresa Bombrys, 43, said she was taken to a farmhouse in the late 1960s by Fr. Chet Warren and forced to watch these odd rituals. (45)

She told *The Toledo Blade* in a recent interview: "I know it's hard for people to really understand this, but it was real. It happened, and I've lived with it for most of my life," and said she believed her abusers wanted to scare her and other children and to create an atmosphere so bizarre no one would believe them. She filed a lawsuit against Mr. Warren, the diocese, and the Oblates in April 2002, in Lucas County Common Pleas Court, alleging years of sexual abuse by the priest. The monetary portion of the case has been settled for an undisclosed sum, but other terms are being negotiated, said her lawyer, Catherine Hoolahan.

Another woman, 52, told police she was taken to a house in the 1960s where ritual sex ceremonies took place. A fourth woman, 24, told a detective she was a young grade-school student when she was carried into a local church at night by several adults who abused her during a ceremony by an altar. She said she could not identify the men. Both women asked not to be identified. (46)

Ms. Hoolahan, who has filed more than a dozen complaints against the diocese in sex-abuse cases, said police should continue focusing on the ritual-abuse accusations. "When you have that many people offering corroborating statements, it makes you wonder," she said. "You have to take this seriously." (47)

After Father Robinson was arrested the church's own investigation was winding down. The two diocese investigators wrote separate reports--totaling thirty-nine pages--and met with the diocese case manager in May in what turned into a

heated exchange between the two investigators. Mr. Connors found the woman who appeared before the review board credible while Mr. Knannlein doubted her story. "There was a lot of shouting back and forth," Mr. Connors recalled. "I just felt that if we had kept going, we could have corroborated at least some of her story." Despite their differences, they agreed on one thing: The investigation should continue. (48)

A key interview was set up with Chet Warren, now 77, at the diocese headquarters to allow him to respond to the allegations. But on the day the interview was to take place, church officials canceled the session, Mr. Connors said. "I showed up at the diocese, but I was told it was over. There would be no interview," he said. "They were shutting it down." (49)

Church records obtained by *The Toledo Blade* show the diocese closed the case in May when the woman at the center of the ritual abuse case rejected a request to undergo a psychiatric evaluation. In an extensive interview with *The Blade*, in which she asked not to be identified, the woman said she was upset at the church's request. "My question back to them was why they don't tell the priest who abused me to undergo psychiatric tests?" she said. "Do hospitals ask rape victims to have psychiatric evaluations?" She said she allowed church investigators to talk to her therapist and some family members. "I tried to comply with everything they asked." (50)

Mr. Pletz, the lawyer for the diocese, said he would not comment on the church investigation. Mr. Knannlein, who pressed for the woman to be evaluated, declined to comment. But in his report to the diocese, he concluded that much more research and investigation should be done before people are accused of these crimes. While the woman's refusal to be tested prompted the diocese to drop its case, police pressed ahead with their own probe. They looked into allegations that some of the ritual abuse took place in local churches, including the basement of Holy Trinity Church in Richfield Center, Ohio, and an Oblate residence on Parkwood Avenue, according to church records and interviews. They did not find any evidence to support the claims. (51)

They spent several days trying to determine if there were any connections between the women's allegations and a loose-knit group of church lay members who gathered on church properties while dressed in nuns' clothes. Police interviewed Jerry Mazuchowski, 53, a church lay minister and retired Toledo public school teacher who founded the group known as Sisters of Assumed Mary, or SAM. He said he told police detectives that his group did not break church laws. (52)

"We did nun drag," he told *The Blade*. "We gave each other nuns' names. It was nothing but absolute fun. Camp. Foolishness." He said a dispute broke out between him and Father Paul Kwiatkowski, the former pastor of St. Hedwig's Church, over allegations the group was responsible for vandalizing the church and holding secret ceremonies--events that led to the pastor to hold a prayer service to cleanse the church. But Mr. Mazuchowski denied vandalizing the church, pointing out he was cleared of any wrong-doing in a special diocese Court of Equity

hearing in 1993. Mr. Mazuchowski said he told police detectives that Father Robinson was not a member of SAM, describing the priest instead as a longtime friend. Since the priest's arrest, Mr. Mazuchowski has appeared on a local news station to proclaim Father Robinson's innocence and penned an article for a neighborhood newsletter saying the priest is innocent until proven guilty. (53)

Prosecutors continued to investigate the ritual abuse allegations, but tried to substantiate claims from three decades ago is difficult. While some of the stories were similar, none of the accusers could pinpoint precise times of their alleged abuse. While they described similar locations, they were unable to recall being in the same room. (54)

Three of the four women interviewed by police said they did not have vivid memories of their experiences until adulthood. Prosecutors said police have not linked any ritual abuse to Father Robinson. The murder case revolves around the physical evidence from the crime scene and anything new they discover about the priest. At times, getting details about Father Robinson has been difficult if not impossible. When police asked the diocese for personnel and other records about the priest, they received three pages showing his church assignments, prosecutors said. (55)

Prosecutors walked into diocese headquarters with a search warrant -- one of the few ever served on a U.S. diocese in a murder case, according to legal experts. During the search, prosecutors were handed more than 100 documents bearing Father Robinson's name but declined to elaborate on the contents. Two days later, they returned with another warrant -- this time demanding access to the office of Father Michael Billian, the Episcopal vicar and the diocese's top administrator. (56)

Though they didn't find more documents about Father Robinson, they found a file stamped PRIVILEGED, containing cases of child abuse, Mr. Pletz said. Prosecutors said they didn't find any references to ritual abuse but declined to say what was in the records or why they did not seize them. One leading sex abuse expert questioned why investigators did not take the records. "That surprises me that they didn't go back with another warrant," said Jeff Anderson, a Minneapolis attorney who has filed more than 400 clerical abuse lawsuits around the country. (57)

Mr. Pletz, the diocese lawyer, said the church has tried to cooperate with police and prosecutors, but he wouldn't comment on the need for search warrants. Father Billian did not return repeated phone calls from *The Blade*. Bishop Leonard Blair would not comment for the story, a spokesman said. (58)

He was the hospital chaplain for six years and worked with Sister Pahl in preparing the chapel, though at times, they didn't get along, according to police. "It seemed like so many people were telling us the same thing: They didn't like each other," recalled Mr. Davidson, the police officer who interviewed numerous hospital employees about the slaying. The priest's supporters say they're standing by the cleric "Because they didn't get along doesn't mean he was a murderer," said Father Kwiatkowski, who has known the defendant 35 years. "It's just not in him. I don't see him as violent at all." (59)

In an interview with police, Father Kwiatkowski said he defended the priest, but that wasn't the reason for their visit. He said the police spent most of the interview asking him about SAM, ritual abuse, and old crosses. "They asked me what kind of template would be used to make patterns on stab wounds," he said. "I said I didn't know." (60)

Enter Doctor Lee

When nationally known forensic expert Henry Lee was hired to examine evidence in the murder case of the Rev. Gerald Robinson, the crime expert's first stop was the murder scene: the Mercy Hospital chapel. He snapped photographs of the sacristy room and tested the floor with new chemical enhancement for blood remnants from the 1980 slaying. He examined the old crime scene photos and studied the letter opener believed to be the murder weapon. While police have expanded their investigation into the death of Sister Margaret Ann Pahl by looking into allegations of ritual sex abuse, the murder case still rested largely on physical evidence. (61)

Dr. Lee, who has assisted police around the country in more than 6,000 investigations, traveled to Toledo to visit the 11-by-17-foot sacristy room in what's now nursing facility and offices. (62)

"With new technology, you can do so much more," he told *The Blade*. The former chief of the Connecticut State Police crime lab was asked to evaluate several pieces of evidence tied to the crime, including:

- A letter opener taken from the priest's quarters at the hospital after the murder.
- Blood stains on an altar cloth and other objects in the chapel, including specific patterns of the stains.
- The pattern of about 30 stab wounds on Sister Pahl's face, neck, and torso.
- DNA samples of the nun's body, which was exhumed last year.

In addition to the crime scene, police reviewed tape-recorded interviews with Father Robinson in the days after the killing and before his lawyer ordered him to stop talking to investigators. (63)

Police are still calling the death of the 71-year-old nun a ritual killing because of the circumstances surrounding the crime, including the way her body was found: lying face up with an altar cloth draped over her torso, her body posed to appear like she was sexually assaulted. Dr. Lee, who studied the autopsy and police reports, said Sister Pahl appeared to have been attacked from behind, her killer strangling her until she was unconscious. While on the floor and still breathing,

she was stabbed in the face, neck, and through the altar cloth covering her upper body. (64)

He said the assailant made a deliberate pattern in the stab wounds which turned out to be an inverted cross. (65)

“What we do is look at everything, the pattern, and the marks left by the weapon,” said Dr. Lee, who has testified in several high-profile cases, including the O.J. Simpson murder trial in 1995. (66)

“Two people interviewed by police said investigators were comparing the pattern of the wounds to a cross. They wanted to know about the shapes of older crosses used by the church in the past,” said the Rev. Stephen Stanbery, a pastor in the Toledo diocese. Local priests interviewed by police said investigators were trying to determine if a cross actually was placed over the altar cloth and the killer stabbed her along its outline. Detectives also interviewed local clerics about a second possible weapon --a stylus, a sharp instrument used by priests to carve crosses into the Pascal candle during Holy Saturday services -- that may have been used the day Sister Pahl was killed. (67)

On May 12, 2006 *Court TV* reported that Gerald Robinson was found guilty of the murder of Sister Pahl and sentenced to 15 years to life.

End Notes

1-9) Porteous, Clinton, "Chile Shocked by Priests murder" BBC 7/27/04.

10) Catholic World News, "Satanic group defaces Cathedral of Linares in Chile" 8/3/04.

11-31) Ferrisi, Sabrina, "Exorcist Warns of Satanic Youth" *National Catholic Register* 10/24/04.

32-60) Sallah, Michael, "Dark Allegations arise amid probe of nun's slaying" *Toledo Blade* 2/20/05.

61-67) Sallah, Michael, "Renowned expert assesses evidence from slaying" 2/20/05.

12

Belgium Waffles

In April of 1998, Belgium's most notorious serial killer was being transported to a courthouse to consult court files pertaining to his case. Somehow, the prison officials forgot to handcuff this dangerous maniac who used the opportunity to snatch a pistol from a corrections officer and escape in a stolen vehicle. The police were in a panic, as well as the general population, as this newly liberated killer was a viscous child rapist who was deranged beyond imagination; a massive manhunt went underway. Luckily, he was captured in just a few hours before anyone was hurt or raped. This particular flight from justice forced three of Belgium's highest officials to resign in the following weeks. Those driven from office included Federal Police Commissioner Willy Deridder and the justice and interior ministers were cajoled into quitting their jobs causing the biggest shake-up in Belgium's history since the end of World War Two. Many Belgians felt the killer was allowed to escape because he possessed detailed knowledge of illicit sex between high government officials and children involving Satanic rituals. His rapid apprehension was seen as a fluke. This criminal is, perhaps, Europe's greatest monster since Hitler and his name is Marc Dutroux. (1)

A Change in the Law

Although he would emerge as one of most hated individuals in Belgium's history, Dutroux's early life could not account for his later vile career. Born in Brussels on November 6, 1956 to two school teachers, Marc would be the oldest of five children. His parents moved to the Belgian Congo but returned to Europe as marital tension engulfed their lives. The couple divorced in 1971 and Marc was domiciled with his mother. The family troubles upset the boy greatly. Soon Marc ran away from home and earned his living as a male prostitute in the greater Brussels area. He later qualified as an electrician, but his involvement with honest work did not last very long. In his late teens, Dutroux would become a vicious mugger, cat burglar and drug dealer. He was streetwise at a very early age, and the only refuge he could find was a life of crime.

According to *Court TV*, Dutroux turned to abducting and raping pre-pubescent children and murdering them. Although the exact number of victims will never be known, Dutroux and Michelle Martin were arrested in February 1986 for abducting and raping five young girls. In April 1989, he was sentenced to thirteen and a half years in prison; Martin received a sentence of five years. During the time Dutroux was serving his sentence, Justice Minister Wathelet allowed the early release of many of Belgium's sex offenders. Although he was sentenced to thirteen years in prison, Dutroux served only three years before being released for good behavior in 1992. It would be another four years before the Belgian Cabinet would finally approve of tightening the laws again, making it more difficult for sex offenders to

be released from prison. The release came despite a warning letter written by Dutroux's own mother to the prison director begging him never to release her deranged son.

After he gained his freedom, he was able to hoodwink a psychiatrist into declaring him mentally disabled, resulting in his qualifying for a government pension. He also received sleeping pills and sedatives from the doctor which he would later use to tranquilize abducted girls. Even though he was allegedly too mentally ill to work, Dutroux was able to secure the funds to purchase seven houses. The money came from a sideline that Dutroux had developed into a lucrative business--the abduction and trafficking of pre-adolescent and teen girls for the international sex trade. (2)

Dungeons and Daughters

Shortly after Dutroux's release from jail, young girls began to disappear around some of the neighborhoods where Dutroux owned houses. Police, during two different occasions, searched the Charleroi house owned by Dutroux. However, the police failed to search the house thoroughly. Hidden in a secret dungeon in the basement were two teenage girls hoping to be found. CNN reported some years later that during the time of the investigation into the missing girls, vital facts concerning the disappearances were kept from other police investigators. Moreover, during a high point in the investigation, a magistrate working on the case had forgotten to tell her replacement that children were even missing.

Other instances of police incompetence occurred between 1993 and 1996. Police ignored a tip from a Dutroux informant in 1993, in which he stated Dutroux offered him between \$3,000 and \$5,000 to kidnap young girls. In 1995, Dutroux's own mother wrote to prosecutors reporting she had knowledge that her son had been keeping young girls in one of his unoccupied houses. The same man who tipped off police to Dutroux's offer of money to kidnap young girls later told police in 1995 he had learned that Dutroux was building a dungeon to keep girls that he would later sell into prostitution. Again, these vital clues into the disappearances of the missing girls were ignored. It would be another year before police would finally pay attention to what the informants had been telling them all along. During that valuable time when nothing was done to further investigate the leads on Dutroux, other girls disappeared.

There was finally a break in the case of the missing girls in August 1996. While conducting a neighborhood search near the area where police thought one of the girls had been kidnapped, they came across a person who remembered a suspicious vehicle close to the individual's house. The eyewitness was able to recall some of the numbers on the vehicle's license plate, which eventually led the police to Marc Dutroux. (3)

On August 15, 1996 police raided Dutroux's house where they discovered a soundproof concrete dungeon in the basement. The dungeon was the one an eyewitness had told them about the previous year. Within the dungeon they

discovered two young girls, who were alive but had been sexually abused. The two girls were Laetitia Delhez, age 12, and Sabine Dardenne, age 14. Both girls had admitted to being sexually assaulted and filmed pornographically by Dutroux. Police found further evidence including at least 300 child pornography videos. The youngest girl, Delhez, had been kidnapped on August 9, 1996, after being grabbed off the street, thrown into Dutroux's car, and drugged. The older of the two, Dardenne, had been kept in the same dungeon as Delhez. However, Dardenne had suffered sexual abuse by Dutroux for a total of two and a half months.

A few days after the discovery of Dardenne and Delhez, police exhumed the bodies of two girls who were not as fortunate and died in Dutroux's deadly dungeon. Julie Lejeune and Melissa Russo, two eight-year-old friends who disappeared together in June 1995, were found buried in Dutroux's backyard at another of his houses in Sars-La-Bouissiere. Dutroux had told police the two girls had starved to death between February and March, during the time he was imprisoned for car theft. Dutroux insisted it was a former accomplice of his named Bernard Weinstein who was at fault for the girls' deaths, stating he failed to feed them while he was imprisoned. He also said it was Weinstein who kidnapped the children, supposedly for a commission from Dutroux. Angered that Weinstein allowed the two little girls to die, he admitted to giving him barbiturates and burying him alive next to Russo and Lejeune. Weinstein's body was found alongside the two girls. (4)

Cover-Up

While in police custody, Dutroux and an accomplice, Michel Lelievre, had allegedly admitted kidnapping two other girls who had gone missing a year earlier from a camping trip at Ostend, a Belgian resort. The two girls, An Marchal, age 19, and Eefje Lambreks, age 17, were found at another house owned by Dutroux, several weeks after the discovery of Russo and Lejeune. The two girls had been buried under concrete in a shed next to Dutroux's house. Police also discovered Dutroux's former accomplice, Bernard Weinstein, had occupied the house for three years.

Others who were detained or arrested in connection with the Dutroux murders and child-sex ring included Dutroux's second wife, Michelle Martin, and Jean Michel Nihoul, a businessman who confessed to organizing an orgy at a Belgium chateau, which several government officials, police officers, and a former European Commissioner attended. Michel Lelievre, an accomplice in the kidnapping of An Marchal and Eefje Lambreks, was also arrested. In September, 1996, nine police officers in Charleroi were detained for questioning regarding their involvement and possible negligence in the Dutroux investigation. Also during that month, Marleen De Cockere was arrested on criminal charges of conspiracy in connection with Dutroux's crime ring. De Cockere was described by police as the love interest of Jean Nihoul. Seven other people were later arrested in connection to the child-sex ring. (5)

There is no doubt that had Dutroux not been released early and had police acted on tips from informants about his activities, the four girls would be alive today and other young girls might have been saved from being sold into prostitution or child pornography. This realization caused a massive outcry from the Belgian public, demanding an inquiry into the handling of the Dutroux investigation, a change in laws, and radical changes to the political and judicial system.

Public outrage sparked a call for Belgium to reinstate the death penalty that had been discontinued several months before the discovery of Dutroux's first victims. The public further demanded a tightening of the parole criteria for those convicted of child sex offenses. This was finally implemented in 1998. (6)

The Dutroux case was the main subject of an international conference in Stockholm, which was organized by the United Nations' Children's Fund on August 28, 1996. Foreign Minister Erik Derycke emotionally called on all nations to combat the exploitation of children by "enhancing mutual law enforcement and judicial cooperation," as quoted in *Belgium Today*. It was stressed that it was necessary for all agencies to work together and fight against child abuse on all levels. It was announced at the conference that measures would be taken to ensure this by calling on EU Member States to combine forces among the countries, ratifying EUROPOL, and prioritizing cases related to those involving children.

Belgian citizens had finally had enough by mid-October 1996. Belgians were furious not only with the mismanagement of the investigation into the missing girls but were even more outraged when the investigative judge in the Dutroux case, Jean-Marc Connerotte, was dismissed. Many Belgians viewed Connerotte as a hero because he secured the arrest of Marc Dutroux and collected significant evidence against him that would help convict Dutroux and those in his pedophile ring. Belgium's Supreme Court removed Connerotte because he attended a fund-raising dinner, which was organized to help the search for missing children. It was later decided that his attendance at the fund-raising event caused him to lose his objectivity when investigating the Dutroux case. (7)

Taking it to the Streets

It was the dismissal of Connerotte and the incompetence of the police that prompted one of the largest peacetime marches in Belgium's history since World War II. In late October, more than 300,000 people dressed in white, a symbol of innocence, marched throughout the city of Brussels demanding serious reforms within the political and judicial system. Belgians were further angered at the possibility of there being a government cover-up. Confidence in the Belgian government was at a low point. Throughout Belgium, there were many who walked away from their work for the day in protest over the recent events. A car assembly plant was left vacant when its workers walked away in anger; some cities came to a stand still when train operators refused to work; and the families of the victims called for a general strike. It was time for the government to take

action and make some of the necessary changes that were suggested in order to restore public order and confidence.

Belgium's Prime Minister Dehaene was quoted as saying, "This is a strong signal which we cannot ignore." He further stated the movement was good because it would speed up reforms. Prime Minister Dehaene promised not only would he see to it that there would be reforms in the justice system, but he would also see the Dutroux investigation pursued to the end. Even Belgium's King Albert spoke up about the Dutroux case and called for major reforms. (8)

During April of 1997, a parliamentary committee investigating the handling of the Dutroux case said the young girls who were murdered might have been alive today if the police had not made so many mistakes during the investigation into the pedophile ring. The committee further recommended that Brussels prosecutor Benoit Dejemeppe be dismissed because he failed to do his job properly. Other officials were found responsible for the deaths of the girls. Investigators were charged with ignoring warnings by informants during a crucial stage during the investigation, mistreating the parents of the victims, and failing to pass on vital information between prosecutors and police. Moreover, the report called for an overhaul of Belgium's police, replacing the current three services -- the local police, judicial police, and the national gendarmerie--with one local and one national service. Further details concerning the hearings, including suggested government reforms, were listed in a report of over 300 pages, which was handed out to party leaders. Next came Dutroux's dramatic escape and recapture mentioned above which brought down many high-ranking Belgian officials and left most Belgians with the feeling that this maniac was allowed to escape. (9)

On March 20, 2000, BBC Online reported that Mark Dutroux, clad in handcuffs, a bulletproof vest, and escorted by ten police officers, was transported to a courtroom in the Belgian town of Neufchateau on charges relating to his brief escape from custody two years before. His appearance lasted for an hour with Dutroux admitting he had escaped but claiming he had only done so to tell the media his version of the story. Judges and lawyers on the case decided to push back the trial until May 2000.

Since Dutroux's escape, two government ministers have resigned and a prosecutor in charge of the case has committed suicide.

Two months later, on June 19, 2000, Marc Dutroux was sentenced to five years in prison on charges of theft and assault in connection with his escape from custody, which is not a crime under Belgian law. BBC Online also reported the families of Dutroux's young victims continued to wait as the investigations into the murders dragged on.

An Elite List

A further BBC report that appeared the following August detailed how Belgian authorities were taking steps to prevent the circulation of a list of convicted or

suspected pedophiles living in Belgium after a small French-language magazine in Luxembourg called *The Investigator* decided to print a list of fifty names. Although a Belgian court issued an emergency injunction against the paper, copies of the magazine containing the list had already been posted to subscribers in Belgium.

Jean Nicolas, Editor of *The Investigator*, claimed the decision was intended to warn the public and no photos of the alleged pedophiles or their victims had been published. He told the Belga news agency the list had been obtained from the files of Jacques Langlois, the investigating magistrate in the Dutroux case. However, a Belgian court termed the decision an abuse of human rights and passed an injunction indicating that Nicolas would face a fine of \$20,000 for each copy containing the list.

In February 2001, BBC reported that Marc Dutroux had appeared in court in southern Belgium alleging that the Belgian State was violating his human rights. He demanded to be released from solitary confinement, undergo fewer body searches, and be allowed to sleep uninterrupted.

Dutroux's lawyer had requested that a fine be imposed on the state if it failed to improve the conditions in which it holds him and that the judge inspect Dutroux's specially constructed cell.

The state claims Dutroux is given special attention for his own protection. Thousands of spectators surrounded the court to express their grief and disillusionment with the Belgian authority's failure to save the girls he is accused of viciously raping and murdering. The trial was postponed again and again which enraged the victims' families and ignited anger and disgust among the Belgian people.

It seems amazing that it took seven years to bring Dutroux to trial. With all the delays and postponements, it convened on March 1, 2004. Facing trial with Dutroux was his wife, Michele Martin, 45, businessman Jean-Michel Nihoul, 63, and Michel Lelievre. Not only did Dutroux and his three alleged accomplices go on trial, but the entire criminal justice system in Belgium did as well.

Liberal Policies Blamed

William Langley of *The Telegraph News* wrote: "If the stakes are high for the defendants, they are no lower for the Belgian government. For already the Dutroux case has exposed a scarcely believable degree of official incompetence and complacency. He [Dutroux] had been jailed for child rape in 1989 but was freed under Belgium's ultra-liberal parole rules after serving only three years of a thirteen-year sentence. An assessment made prior to his release stated he was no longer a danger to the public.

Like most pedophiles, after his release, Dutroux went right back to his outrageous crimes. The police were given very specific tips, but there was no competent follow up, despite his criminal record.

Despite the biggest judicial investigation in the nation's history, almost no one in Belgium believes the full story of Dutroux's activities will ever be known, even after the trial.

Bungled Investigation

The Dutroux arrest revealed monumental levels of police bungling and saw public confidence in Belgium's law enforcement agencies plummet to an all-time low.

According to prosecuting magistrate Damien Vandermeersch, Belgium's police investigation unit has become worse since 1996, when Dutroux was first arrested. Vandermeersch said a series of recent police forms have left officers hamstrung by bureaucracy and drowning in a sea of paperwork. Expatica sums it up this way: "The impression this case gives is that justice in Belgium is not so much blind as totally headless." (10)

The Trial of a Monster

The long-awaited trial opened on March 1, 2004. Before it began, Dutroux had already told the media he was just a pawn in a network of pedophiles and that Michel Nihoul, also on trial, was the brains behind the network.

The following day, the prosecutor, Michel Bourlet, seemed to agree that Dutroux was not acting on his own but was part of a network, along with Nihoul, colleague Michel Lelievre, and his wife, Michelle Martin. However, Bourlet did not suggest that the network was any larger than the individuals who had already been charged with Dutroux. (11)

On the third day of the trial, Expatica.com reported Dutroux claimed that Lelievre and two police officers had actually helped him kidnap An Marchal, 17, and Eefje Lambreckx, 19, who were found raped and murdered. He accused his codefendants of murdering Eefje and An, as well as two other girls.

Ambrose Evans-Pritchard of the *Telegraph* U.K. reported that Judge Jacques Langlois, who had compiled an enormous body of research on the case, testified that over the years, Dutroux honed his stalking, abduction, rape, and brainwashing skills. (12)

Langlois also testified that Dutroux's ex-wife, Michelle Martin, left two girls to starve while Dutroux was in prison. He said Ms. Martin had told him she had been asked by her husband to feed Lejeune and Russo when he was jailed for four months for car theft in late 1995. But she was afraid that the girls would attack her.

March 4 brought the testimony of Judge Jean-Marc Connerotte who told the court that he was personally shocked at the terrifying professionalism that Dutroux displayed when he constructed the cell in his home to hide his victims. The cell had been specially designed to ventilate the air from the ceiling so that it would be difficult to detect the girls even with K-9 units. (13)

Evans-Pritchard also wrote that Connerotte broke down in tears when he described the bulletproof vehicles and armed guards needed to protect him against the shadowy figures determined to stop the full truth coming out. Never before in Belgium has an investigating judge at the service of the people been subjected to such pressure. He was told by police that [murder] contracts had been taken out against the magistrates. Connerotte testified that the investigation was seriously hampered by the protection of suspects by people in the government. "Rarely," he said, "has so much energy been spent opposing an inquiry." He believed the mafia had taken control of the case.

As noted earlier, Connerotte was removed from the case after attending a dinner for the families of the victims, which instigated the protest march of some 300,000 people in Brussels. He had rescued two of the girls from the dungeon under Dutroux's home. When he tried to get them to come out of the dungeon, they were afraid that the pedophile group was coming to collect them and clung to Dutroux for protection. (14)

"They thanked and embraced him, which is truly disgusting," Connerotte claimed. "That shows how far they had been conditioned." (15)

The judge blamed the local police in the city of Charleroi for neglect and incompetence in their investigation and lack of follow-up which resulted in the starvation deaths of Melissa Russo and Julie Lejeune, both eight years old. A new controversy arose when a handcuff key was found in Dutroux's cell, apparently smuggled in a salt bag. Prison authorities were once again accused of trying to arrange Dutroux's escape.

On April 19, one of Dutroux's rape and kidnap victims, Sabine Dardenne, twenty, told the court of her ordeal with the defendant when she was twelve years old. She had been held captive for eighty days in Dutroux's dungeon and vehemently rejected his apology given in court. (16)

CNN.com reported, "As Dutroux watched with a smirk from the dock, she told the court he had made her believe her parents had abandoned her after refusing to pay a ransom for her release. She said Dutroux had posed as her protector, telling her he was keeping her from his boss who wanted to kill her." (17)

On April 20, when Dardenne returned to a second day of testimony, CNN.com wrote that she "*objected that Dutroux implied he had kidnapped another victim in 1996 to find her a friend.*"

"Is it not possible to silence this man?" she asked. (18)

When Dutroux said he had protected her from a pedophile network, she countered, "So, if I understand you, I should be thankful?" (19)

Another of Dutroux's victims that lived to testify against him testified that day. Laetitia Delhez, 22, was also rescued from the cellar along with Dardenne. On June 14, 2004, the jury, consisting of eight women and four men were sent out to deliberate at the end of a three-month trial. The jurists convened at a fortified Arlon army barracks to review approximately 400,000 pages of evidence, including the testimonies of over 500 witnesses. Moreover, the judge gave them 243 questions to evaluate pertaining to the criminal charges against Dutroux, Martin, Lelievre, and Nihoul. (20)

It took a little more than three days for the jury to come back with a verdict. On June 17th, Dutroux was found guilty of kidnapping and raping all six girls. He was also convicted of murdering An Marchel and Eefje Lambrecks, as well as his alleged accomplice Bernard Weinstein. Additionally, Lelievre was also found guilty of kidnapping but managed to escape murder charges. (21)

Satanic Cover-up

Marc Dutroux, his accomplices, and victims all claimed they were part of a larger international network of pedophiles and that many of the world's elite participated in orgies. The exploited pre-teen and teenaged girls were supplied for this ring by a vast global network of procurers who kidnapped and sold young attractive girls and boys to this cabal. In essence, Dutroux was claiming to be a low man on a very high totem pole of perverts who sought sex slaves to appease their sick desires. The issue of Satanism connections came up early in the police investigation of Dutroux and his crew of child abductors. Like many aspects of the investigation, the link to Satanism was lost behind a smoke screen of apparent incompetence. However, early investigation of the child abduction did in fact investigate links to a Satanic coven which operated near where Dutroux operated his vile business. The British *Sunday Times* ran a story linking Dutroux to local Devil worshipers. It is worth reading in its entirety as it cogently demonstrates that investigators initially believed Satanists were involved in Dutroux's horrible business.

Satanic Links to Belgian Murder Trial
by Peter Conradi

Sunday Times December 29, 1996

Brussels Satanic sects involved in bizarre rites including human sacrifice are being linked by Belgian police with this summer's string of grisly pedophile murders in which at least four children died. Five witnesses came forward last week and described how black masses were held, at which children were killed in front of audiences said to have included prominent members of Belgian society. One investigator said it was "like going back to the Middle Ages". The tentacles of the sects appear to have stretched beyond the borders of Belgium, to Holland, Germany and even America. The witnesses - several of whom claim to have received death threats - say that young babies were handed over by their parents willingly in return for money. In other cases the victims were abducted. The witnesses, who are believed to have identified the sites where the masses took place to the police, said organizers had also photographed participants and threatened to hand over the pictures if they went to the police.

The investigation centers on Abrasa, a self-styled institute of black magic, whose headquarters in the village of Forchies-la-Marche in southern Belgium was raided by police last week. Human skulls were among the objects removed from the run down building. Forchies-la-Marche is near the city of Charleroi, where Marc Dutroux, the unemployed electrician accused of the pedophile killings, was arrested in August.

The bodies of four victims of the ring were dug up at properties he owned - but he is feared to have killed many more. Police have long suspected that Dutroux, a convicted pedophile, was part of an international network which abducted children, sexually abused them and then killed them. Their activities appear to have been financed by the sale of pornographic videos filmed by members of the ring. However the revelation of a possible Satanic link has added a bizarre twist to the affair, which has shaken the police and judiciary and plunged Belgium into an unprecedented wave of soul searching over the past few months. Investigators are still trying to determine the precise nature of the links between the Satanists and the pedophile group.

In a separate twist, a Belgian newspaper claimed yesterday that A FORMER EUROPEAN COMMISSIONER was among a group of JUDGES, SENIOR POLITICIANS, LAWYERS AND POLICEMEN who attended orgies held in a Belgian chateau and organized by Michel Nihoul, one of Dutroux's alleged accomplices. La Dernière Heure, which claimed to have a guest list, did not name the commissioner but said he "came with a girl, Josette, nicknamed JoJo, the Bomb". Belgian police, using bulldozers and mechanical diggers, resumed their search yesterday of disused mineshafts in Jumet, a suburb of Charleroi, where they believe Dutroux and his gang may have buried bodies. A team of 12 pot-holers has also been called in. "We are

convinced that we are going to find something interesting here”, said Guy Soumoy, a spokesman for the local police. Police first searched the area, with its warren of abandoned mine shafts, two months ago, after Dutroux suggested they look there. They returned earlier this month after a further, apparently more detailed tip-off from Michelle Martin, Dutroux's wife and alleged accomplice.”

As the investigation into Dutroux’s activities broadened, the authorities spoke less and less about Satanism and downplayed the pedophile gang’s constant claims that they were part of an international cabal. The widespread belief among Belgians that their government was involved in an elaborate cover-up seems true when one looks at the hard facts. The police constantly bungled the investigation to a degree which went beyond the realm of incompetence and into the secret world of high-level conspiracy.

Consider that the police refused to investigate the many high-ranking members of Belgian society who were implicated by Dutroux and his perverted gang. It must be remembered that Dutroux claimed two police officers were *part* of his abduction team. The fact that Dutroux easily escaped and was only caught by a fluke made many Belgian’s suspicious. A handcuff key found in his cell during a random search made it seem incontrovertible that some faction of Belgium’s law enforcement was involved in the kidnapping and sale of sex slaves.

The fact that little attention was afforded to the Satanic links makes sense when one considers that victims of sex slavery often describe Luciferian rituals conducted by prominent individuals. The Belgium police would never investigate such ritualistic claims as it would cast them in a bad light because they are obviously involved in Satanic ritual abuse.

The flip-flopping of Brussels in regard to police involvement in the slave trade is disgusting. That is why, as most Belgians contend, the whole truth about the Dutroux case will never be known by the general public. In the case of investigating high-level Satanic pedophilia, the government of Belgium waffles.

End Notes

1-21) Bell, Rachel, *Marc Dutroux*, Court TV:
http://www.crimelibrary.com/serial_killers/predators/dutroux/evil_1.html

13

Raising Hell

The over-riding concern of this chapter is to examine the relationship between elite secret societies and criminal Satanists, and to demonstrate that these seemingly mutually exclusive groups are closely connected and ultimately share a common aim.

The Skull and Bones Society is a Satanic Organization

The only non-Crowleyan Satanist group has actually had the most influence in politics, economics and popular culture. Founded at Yale in 1832, the Skull and Bones Society (aka The Order of Death or The Order) came in the wake of President John Quincy Adams purging of Freemasons from government jobs, feeling that the fraternity had inordinate power in American political life. As a means to continue the Freemasonic tradition in the power structure of the United States, a Yale student named William Russell went to Germany and secured a charter from some unnamed university Masonic-like secret society. A legal entity called the Russell Trust was set up as the parent organization of the Skull and Bones Society and this corporation owns all the land on which Yale University rests and could technically evict this Ivy League institution from its home. This is the reason Yale University refuses to even speak of The Order and professors and instructors are ordered never to comment to the press about the Skull and Bones.

The Skull and Bones is headquartered in a bizarre building in the center of Yale's campus in New Haven called the Tombs. The structure has an eerie quality and looks very much like a mausoleum. It is reported that the interior part of the building is decorated with coffins and real human skulls, including that of the Native American leader Geronimo. Potential initiates meet twice a week for elaborate dinners. Members are traditionally called Bonesman. Even these high society Satanists cannot get away from Nazi practices. Since the late 1940s, members of The Order use a silver cutlery set once owned and used by Hitler himself. It was stolen by a Bonesman who served in Europe at the end of World War II. (1)

The Skull and Bones Society fits our definition of a Satanic organization because of their initiation ceremony. Like all Masonic orders, the Skull and Bones has a mock resurrection ceremony (a parody of Christian resurrection) and has even more disturbing rituals which have nothing less than a Satanic slant to them. For example, the initiates drink blood or mock blood from a skull. The tallest member of the initiation group is deemed "The Big Devil", and the shortest, "The Little Devil". At every initiation ritual since The Order began, there has always been a member dressed up as the Prince of Darkness who vetted the eager candidates for membership. (2)

The original ceremony, which was changed sometime in the early twentieth century, involved an overt pledge of allegiance to the Fallen Angel. Alexandra Robbins, author of *Secrets of the Tomb* (2003) the definitive study of The Order, writes the following concerning this original initiation rite:

*The heart of the initiation ceremony has evolved since the mid-nineteenth century, when **a junior was simply taken before the Devil, who would strike the initiate** in the back with a sword and decree, "I dub thee Knight of the Skull and Cross Bones." (my italics) (3)*

The ritual was changed at some unknown date and the Devil was expanded to include two other presiding figures in which the initiate comes into physical contact with the candidate which is a common theme of initiation. The proceedings constitute nothing less than a Black Mass in which candidates are instructed by initiation guides (called Shakers, who are dressed in skeleton outfits) to drink symbolic blood from a skull called a Yorick. At the final part of the ceremony, the initiate kneels before three figures who are dressed as the Devil with horns, a Pope wearing a miter who rests his foot on a stone skull, and a Black knight (called Don Quixote). Robbins describes this macabre, highly formal procedure:

*The shakers push the initiate to his knees in front of the Yorick and force his head toward the pool of "blood". To the neophyte's dismay, the crowd implores him "Drink it! Drink it! Drink it," which he must. The shakers hurry the initiate to the Pope, but not before **the Devil whips him in the face with his tail. The initiate bends to kiss the Pope's slippered toe on the skull.** When the initiate is brought before Don Quixote, who stands just in front of the fireplace with a sword in his right hand, he is pushed once again to his knees, but this time for glory as the crowd falls silent once again. **Quixote taps the junior on the left shoulder** and says, "By order of our order, I dub thee Knight of Eulogia." (my italics) (4)*

The three diabolic figures are clearly a representation of the infernal trinity of Lucifer (the horned figure), Anti-Christ (the Pope figure with the skull), and Satan (the Black Knight). This is a diabolical inversion of the Christian Trinity of Father, Son and Holy Ghost. Consequently, all members ultimately owe their allegiance to whom Jesus referred to as the Prince of this World.

According to Alexandra Robbins, Eulogia is a Greek Goddess (and thus gives the Skull and Bones a strong link to witchcraft and Neo-paganism). It also serves as an inversion of the Blessed Virgin Mary's role in Roman Catholic theology. This is all meant to obscure the Christian God and replace Him as a means to gain control over the hearts, minds and souls of those who offer allegiance to the infernal trinity and the goddess.

Bonesmen and Boneswomen (women are now initiated) take blood oaths never to admit their membership publicly and are told to leave the room or change the subject if non-members ever question them about The Order. They operate purely for the mutual aid of other members and are expected to help one another as far as their station in life allows. They have a yearly meeting of the 800 or so living

members on a secret private island on the St. Lawrence River, which is owned by the Russell Trust. What rites take place there are currently unknown - no member has ever revealed the exact nature of the activities that occur on this remote and strange island. (5)

What becomes frightening about the Skull and Bones is the high number of powerful people who are Order members, like President Bush (father and son), former presidential candidate John Kerry, not to mention a hoard of prominent people in politics, business and high society. It does not matter if members believe that what they knelt before was a metaphor - their allegiance is still to the infernal realm. It does not matter if Skull and Bones members never engage in such rituals again - from a Christian perspective one need only sell his or her soul to the Devil once and it's a done deal for this life and the next, unless the initiate renounces the oaths they took and denounces the organization.

President George W. Bush (a Methodist and allegedly born-again Christian) and Senator John F. Kerry (a Roman Catholic) have never renounced their oaths to the Skull and Bones - in fact they keep them. This is evinced in the *Meet the Press* interviews hosted by Tim Russert during the 2004 Presidential election. When Russert questioned both these men about the Skull and Bones they refused to answer and changed the subject. (6)

Even a cursory review of the members of the Skull and Bones Society over its 127year history is mind blowing when one considers their roles in world politics, economics and even entertainment. Remember the members of the following sort list all were initiated into The Order and knelt before the Devil:

William Howard Taft, (President of the United States)

George Herbert Walker Bush (President of the United States)

John Dulles (founder of the CIA)

William F. Buckley (PBS host)

David McCullough (PBS host)

Fred Smith (founder, Federal Express)

McGeorge Bundy (Presidential advisor)

Henry John Heinz (heir, Heinz Ketchup)

John Sargent Pillsbury (Governor of Minnesota, heir Pillsbury Foods)

The teachings of the Skull and Bones are really not too far away from Aleister Crowley's ideas and both have their roots in Masonic-influenced secret societies. Crowley always claimed to be part of an older tradition and the Skull and Bones seems to be part of this same ancient sinister system.

The Bohemian Grove is a Satanic Organization

The Bohemian Club is an all-male organization based in San Francisco, California which has attracted many prominent local and international figures. Every year, the club hosts an annual two-week camp which has become notorious for its bizarre rituals and its illustrious guest list.

The Bohemian Club was founded in 1872 and established as a club for newspaper reporters and men who like the arts and literature. The first clubhouse was the Astor Hotel on Sacramento Street, San Francisco, California. By 1877, membership had grown so rapidly that the club had to relocate to 430 Pine Street as the affiliate list rose to nearly 600, which now included strong representation of the California business and banking elite. By the 1930s, membership had surged to over 2,000 and again the club had to move to the new location in 1934. The opening of the new million dollar clubhouse was a controversial decision, as the country was in the grips of the Great Depression. In 1935 arsonists set several fires near and on Bohemian Club property during the annual camp. It is believed the fires were started by disgruntled workers who had been giving business leaders trouble. (7)

Today, it is largely recognized as the premier elite men's club. To become a member there is a \$10,000 initiation fee and \$120 for monthly dues. Artists are allowed to join for free and only have to pay \$60 in monthly dues. The club was once well-covered by the media, with excess of thirty articles a year in the local press. Bohemian Club elections were even published. Reporting subsided in the mid 1930s, and by the 1950s the club had made a conscious decision to lower its public profile and completely restrict access to membership information. Part of the reason for this may come from the fact that outsiders were becoming privy to some bizzare occult rituals held at the clubs summer camp grounds known as the Bohemian Grove. The entire organization is known by this name now. (8)

Bohemian Grove is a 2,712-acre redwood forest located in Sonoma County, California This summer camp brings in far more prestigious people than those who attend the monthly meetings of the San Francisco Bohemian Club.

The camp originated in 1878 when a large troop of Bohemians made their way to the forests of Sonoma County for a *Jink* (various artistic performances). It was not until 1882 that regular camps were held in what is now known as Bohemian Grove. Originally the land was rented from the Sonoma Lumber Company, until the club purchased it in 1899. The Bohemian Club made many more land purchases up to 1966, which now makes up the 2,712-acre holding. (9)

The Grove is not open to the public, and during the summer camp, the members pay for a great deal of security. The only non-members who are allowed in are staff, particularly security. Until recently, women were not permitted to work there. Big names in banking, media, politicians, military contractors, entertainment etc. are on the member list. There are different camps for members of varying degrees status. (10)

One of the best known camps includes George H. W. Bush, George W. Bush, A. W. Clausen (World Bank), Walter Cronkite and William F. Buckley. In the famous Nixon White House Tapes, President Nixon spoke in over twenty-five conversations about the Bohemian Grove of which he had been a member. This is something he had never directly spoken to the American people about. However, he has been recorded saying:

The Bohemian Grove, which I attend from time to time, it is the most faggy goddamned thing you could ever imagine, with that San Francisco crowd. I can't shake hands with anybody from San Francisco. (11)

The Nixon quote confirms widespread rumors that there are actually homosexual relations between the entirely male membership of the organization.

In recent years, as more people have become aware of Bohemian Grove, the mainstream media has ran articles claiming that it is little more than a place where world leaders can let themselves go, and nothing more. However, many people believe that the attendees use the camp for political and business purposes.

What makes the Bohemian Grove a Satanic organization is the deranged ritual members perform. The grove's symbol is an owl, which is commonly linked to the ancient near-east deity, Moloch, to whom children were sacrificed. In the Grove itself there stands a huge carved owl which has a sacrificial altar in front of it. During the opening night of the camp, there is a ceremony in which members dress in robes and hoods (not unlike Ku Klu Klan regalia) and perform either real or mock human ritual sacrifice to the Owl of Bohemia. By Christian standards, by which the majority of members claim affiliation, all such sacrifices are forbidden, be they mock or for real.

The sacrificial victim is named Care, suggesting that all the members must destroy all vestiges of caring for any human beings except for members of the Grove. Much like the Skull and Bones (as one can see Bonesman make up large portion of ranking Bohemians), members are expected to work solely for the good of fellow members only. (12)

Even a quick look at the text of the actual ritual is quite stunning:

The High Priest:

Our funeral pyre awaits the corpse of Care.

[The Barcarolle by Charles Hart. The introductory horn solo comes from the direction of the ferry slip. The ferry of Care, paled by a lone boatman, appears and passes up the lake to the foot of the Shrine. Acolytes await the barge.]

The High Priest:

Oh thou, thus ferried 'cross the shadowy tide
In all the ancient majesty of death
Dull Care, archenemy of Beauty; not for thee.
The tender tribute and the restful grave,
But fire shall have its will of thee
And all the winds make merry with thy dust!

Bring fire!

[Fanfare of music by Leigh Harline. Enter Torch Bearers. The Acolytes now seize and lift bier from the barge, hold it high above their heads and bear it in triumph up to the accompanied by the Choristers. The music is interrupted by peals of thunder and rush of wind. The ensemble stands

transfixed with surprise and awe. All lights down, except torches and Lamp. Care laughs upon the hill. The dead tree is illuminated.]

The Voice of Care:

Fools! Fools! Fools! When will ye learn that me ye cannot slay? Year after year ye burn me in this grove, lifting your silly shouts of triumph to the stars. But when again ye turn your feet toward the marketplace, am I not waiting for you, as old? Fools! Fools! to dream ye conquer Care!

[The High Priest has come down to the Lake's edge and stands gazing up at the ghostly tree from which the voice of Care has come.]

The High Priest:

Nay, thou mocking spirit, it is not all a dream. We know thou waitest for us when this our sylvan holiday shall end. And we shall meet and fight thee as of old, some of us prevail against thee, and some thou shalt destroy. But this, too, we know: year and after year, within this happy Grove, our fellowship has banned thee for a space, and thy malevolence that would pursue us here has lost its power beneath these friendly trees. So shall we burn thee once again this night and the flames that eat thine effigy will read the sign: Midsummer set us free.

The Voice of Care:

So shall ye burn me once again! Ho, Ho, Not with these flames which hither ye have brought. From regions where I reign! Ye Priests and fools, I spit upon your fire!

[Explosions at the Pyre. The torches are instantly extinguished. No light save from the Lamp. Care's laughter fills the darkness. The High Priest kneels and lifts his arms to the Shrine.]

The High Priest:

O thou, great symbol of all mortal wisdom, Owl of Bohemia, we do beseech thee, Grant us thy counsel!

[The music of the Fire Finale begins, offstage. An aura of light begins to glow about the Owl's head, gradually silhouetting the Colossus.]

The Voice of the Owl (Walter Kronkite):

No fire, if it be kindled from the world Where Care is nourished on the hates of men Shall drive him from this grove. One flame alone Must light this pyre, the pure eternal flame That bums within the Lamp of Fellowship Upon the altar of Bohemia.

[High Priest rises and ascends to Lamp of Fellowship.]

The High Priest:

Great Owl of Bohemia, we thank thee for thy adjuration. [Lights torch and turns toward Pyre.] Well should we know our living flame of fellowship can see the grasping claws of Care, Throttle his impious screams and send his cowering carcass from this Grove. Begone, detested Care, begone! Once more we banish thee! let the all-potent spirit of this lamp. By its cleansing and ambient fire Encircle this mystic scene Hail, Fellowship; begone Dull Care! Once again Midsummer sets us free!

(Taken from the Alex Jones film *Dark Secrets*) (13)

Filmmaker Alex Jones contends that members of the Bohemian Grove actually purchase small owl figures sold by the organization for home devotional use. In this regard, Bohemian Club members sacrifice and destroy Care year round. It is blood-curtling when one realizes how many high-ranking political leaders have attended this strange occult ceremony. If these people *don't care*, then God help us all:

Dick Cheney (Vice President of the United States)

Colin Powell (Secretary of State)

Lamar Alexander (Secretary of Education)

Jack Kemp (Secretary of Housing and Urban Development)
 Ronald Reagan (President of the United States)
 Alexander Haig (Secretary of State)
 Caspar W. Weinberger (Secretary of Defense)
 William F. Smith (Attorney General)
 Jimmy Carter (President of the United States)
 Joseph A. Califano (Secretary of Health, Education, and Welfare)
 Gerald R. Ford (President)
 Nelson A. Rockefeller (Vice President) Henry
 A. Kissinger (Secretary of State) William E.
 Simon (Secretary of Treasury) Elliot
 Richardson (Attorney General)
 William P. Rogers (Secretary of State)
 David M. Kennedy (Secretary of Treasury)
 Walter J. Hickel (Secretary of the Interior)
 Robert H. Finch (Secretary of Health, Education, and Welfare)
 Dwight D. Eisenhower (President of the United States)
 Herbert C. Hoover (President of the United States)
 Ray L. Wilbur (former Secretary of the Interior)
 Calvin Coolidge (President of the United States)
 Dwight F. Davis (Secretary of War)
 William H. Taft (President of the United States)
 John Major, (U.K. Prime Minister)
 Arnold Schwarzenegger (Governor of California)
 Helmut Schmidt (German Chancellor)

The Bilderberg Group is a Satanic Organization

The Bilderberg Group is a highly secretive organization that meets annually for a three-day conference. Its attendees are among Europe and America's most influential bankers, businessmen, politicians and media people. They claim their meetings are private in order to encourage frank and open discussion. This is suspect because of the fact that the meetings are so heavily guarded by elite riot squads -- what are they talking about that they need such extensive military protection? The first Bilderberg meeting was held in 1954 at the Bilderberg Hotel in the Netherlands, which was funded by the CIA. It was chaired by Bernhard Leopold Friedrich Eberhard Julius Kurt Karl Gottfried Peter zu Lippe-Biesterfeld (commonly known as Prince Bernhard of the Netherlands). He remained chairman until 1976, when he was forced to resign after he was found to be involved in a string of scandals. This included demanding commissions be paid to him on Dutch government aircraft purchases, as well as arranging to pay more than a million dollars in bribes to the Fascist dictator Juan Peron of Argentina in exchange for Argentina buying new railroad equipment from the Netherlands. During the 1970s, Prince Bernhard was one of the most powerful men in Europe. By the 1970s the Prince was serving on more than 300 corporate boards and committees. In his youth Prince Bernhard was trained as a fighter pilot and later became an officer of the German Reiter SS Corps. He later became Secretary to the Board of Directors at

Paris of IG Farben, which produced the gas pellets Zyklon B used in Hitler's concentration camps to gas Jews, Gypsies and German dissidents. (14)

After Prince Bernhard resigned as the chairman of Bilderberg Group the position went to former Prime Minister of the United Kingdom, Alec Douglas-Home. He served as chairman until 1980, when he was replaced by Walter Schell. Walter was quickly replaced by Sir Eric Roll, former chairman of SG Warburg. He served as chairman until 1989 until he was replaced by England's Lord Carrington. In 1999 Etienne Davignon assumed the role of chairman. Etienne Davignon was Vice-Chairman of the European Community Commission, Chairman of the Royal Institute of International Affairs and a major player in banking and finance. (15)

The purpose of the Bilderberg Group appears to be the expansion of globalization for the economic gain of members and to promote this agenda to new attendees. Those who show themselves as supporters of globalization and centralization will find themselves elevated to positions of power, such as Bill Clinton, Tony Blair, Romano Prodi and George Robertson. Bill Clinton was Governor of Arkansas when he first attended Bilderberg in 1991, in 1992 he became President of the United States. Tony Blair was MP for Sedgefield when he attended Bilderberg in 1993, in 1994 he became labor leader and later Prime Minister of the United Kingdom. Romano Prodi attended Bilderberg in 1999, in the same year he became President of the European Commission. George Robertson was Defense Secretary of the UK when he attended Bilderberg in 1998, the next year he was made Secretary General of NATO.

As we shall see below the Bilderger Group was recently caught in a sex scandal involving Satanism, pedophilia and child pornography. (16)

Two other groups which are closely tied to the Skull and Bones Society, Bohemian Grove and Bilderberg Group are the Center for Foreign Relations and the Trilateral Commission which are loaded with members of the above groups. These groups, to my knowledge, have not been linked to any occult activity although members of them certainly have been. In this regard, it can be safely asserted that these two groups are within the sphere of influence of the aforementioned occult societies and serve as minion organizations.

Marc Dutroux's Link to King Albert's Pink Ballets

In an earlier chapter we covered the case of Marc Dutroux the child abductor who was linked to the Abrasas Satanic cult. Dutroux claimed, and two of his victims confirmed, that he was part of an international ring of Devil worshipping pedophiles that included the highest echelons of world politics, economics and culture. It must be recalled that Marc Dutroux, his wife Michelle Martin, Michel Lelièvre and Michel Nihoul were all convicted and sentenced to long jail terms. Their accomplice Bernard Weinstein was murdered by Dutroux. There have been rumors swarming in Belgium for decades that wild ritualistic sex rituals occurred which were dubbed "Pink Ballets" in which high -ranking members of Belgian society and police officials were in attendance. (17) Alexandra Cohen, a member

of Belgium's parliament, recently wrote about the Satanic links to the Dutroux case:

The Belgian police are currently also investigating satanic sects. It is possible that Niboul was involved in satanic ceremonies, and it is certain that some of the members of the Dutroux group had business contacts with Satanic groups. It is not clear whether the participants in Satanic orgies took their Satanism as a serious religion or whether some of the sex parties were just dressed up as satanic rituals in order to give the perverts an added kick.

The Belgian authorities started an investigation into satanic sects after the police found a letter from a satanic high priest to Bernard Weinstein, one of Dutroux's two accomplices in the kidnapping of children. (Mrs. Dutroux being the other.) The letter asked for a delivery in order to be able to perform the rituals of Walpurgis Night. The delivery is believed to refer to young children needed as sacrifices in a black mass.

There are many rumors concerning the satanic sects. Some claim that female sect members were deliberately impregnated so that their newly born children could be killed on Satanic altars. To me as a mother, this sounds so fantastically horrible that I pray it isn't true. If it is true, however, I doubt whether the Belgians would be very much surprised after the other truths they have been forced to face. (Perhaps that Loch Ness monster really exists!)

For instance, some of the police officers questioned by the Parliamentary Commission confirmed that there have indeed been Pink Ballets (18)

This statement is quite stunning and has gone unreported in mainstream media outlets. The police in Belgium admitted that such sex orgies occurred that involved high-ranking officials of their own government. This explains a great deal. It explains why Dutroux was not investigated for five months after girls went missing in his area. It explains why the honest judge in the case was removed for no good reason. It explains why Dutroux was able to escape and why a handcuff key was found in his possession during a prison inspection. Dutroux was aided and abetted by the high-ranking officials who hired him to serve for as a sex slave trader for Satanic rituals!

The reality of such bizarre sex rituals have been confirmed, not only by the police, but by victims. Regina Louf, a victim of the cult, has given testimony which has divided Belgium. Louf came forward after Judge Connerotte, who originally handled the case, made an appeal to victims of pedophiles to tell police what they knew. Judge Connerotte, the man who had arrested Dutroux and saved two teenage girls from his dungeon, is a national hero in Belgium. (19)

Louf was the first of ten to come forward. She told investigators how from the age of twelve she'd been given by her parents to a family friend, Tony Van den Bogaert, who'd had a key to their house. He would collect her from school and

take her away for weekends to sex parties where she was given to other men and secretly filmed having sex with them. "It was highly organized," she says. There was a lot of money involved. In 1996 she related her experiences to a police team under carefully filmed and supervised conditions. She described certain regular clients including judges, one of the country's most powerful politicians (now dead) and a prominent banker. The names given were all attendees at Bilderberg meetings. She gave the police the names by which she knew these men, detailed the houses, apartments and districts where she had been taken with other children to entertain the sick guests with strange sex. (20)

This entertainment was not just sex, she told the police. It involved sadism, torture and even murder, and again she described the places, the victims and the ways they were killed. One of the regular organizers of these parties, she claimed, was the man she knew as Mich, Jean Michel Nihoul, a very cruel man. He abused children in a very sadistic way, she said. Also there was the young Dutroux. Dutroux was a boy who brought drugs (cocaine) to these parties and also more child sex slaves. (21)

At these events Nihoul was a sort of party beast while Dutroux was more on the side. Louf's testimony was vitally important. If true, it placed Dutroux and Nihoul, suspected accomplices in the latest child abductions, together at the scene of similar crimes ten years before. Police began to check her story. However, when the presiding judge was removed for no apparent reason, her testimony, and that of the other ten witnesses, was abandoned. Dutroux and Nihoul were tried solely for the murder and abuse of two girls and the abduction of two others.

Ironically, the police believed they had verified key elements of Louf's story. At least one of the murders she described matched an unsolved case. One of the police officers in the team, Rudi Hoskens, had been assigned to re-examine that case and was convinced she had witnessed the murder: "She gave us some details that made us think it's impossible to give without having been there at that place - the way the body was found at that time, and the way she described the person who was killed." (22)

What Louf had described was a macabre torture session which had eventually killed a 15-year-old girl she knew as Chrissie. "It was a sort of bondage...so her legs and her hands and her throat were connected with the same rope, and so when she moved she strangled herself." Louf insists both Nihoul and Dutroux were there that night. Nihoul, she claims, took part in the murder, a charge he denies. Dutroux, she says, watched. Christine Van Hees's body had been found in 1984 dumped in the grounds of a disused mushroom farm on the outskirts of Brussels. (23)

Journalist Jean Nicolas obtained the court testimonies of the ten victims who came forward and published the names of the pedophiles who were identified in a book entitled *The Pedophile Dossier*. Among the names was King Albert II himself. (24)

The King filed charges against Jean Nicolas and sought to have the book taken off the market and have Nicolas fined 20,000 Euros per copy sold. The Bilderberg King actually lost the case as the presiding judge allowed the book to remain in

print but ordered Nicolas to add an insert which stated that the King denies the charges. Perhaps the judge feared that Nicolas would call the ten witnesses who are named in the court records in which the King was exposed as a pedophile.

The investigation of the Pink Ballets has taken a sinister and deadly turn. Since 1995, there have been twenty unexplained deaths of potential witnesses connected with Dutroux. "In Belgium," said Regina Louf smiling, "if you're a potential witness you're either dead, or like me, mad." (25)

More Details of the Bilderberg Sex Rituals

Much of the details of the Bilderberg sex rituals have come to light but have been surprised by the mainstream media. The following article from Britain's *Telegraph* newspaper on March 16, 1997 describes the Bilderberg rituals and it is reproduced in its entirety:

Belgians shocked by tales of secret policemen's orgy ***By Marcus Warren in Brussels***

PUNCH-drunk Belgium is reeling from a new shock after a senior police officer confirmed last week what has long been rumoured: that some of the country's leaders indulge in sex parties, known ironically as "ballets roses".

Amusing and appalling in turn, the testimony of Georges Marnette, a senior Brussels policeman, might appear to make a welcome change from the horrors of recent months. But this is not mere entertainment: the stories may provide an important insight into the mores of a ruling class that has outraged ordinary people.

At times, Belgium has been in the throes of a near-revolution, with hundreds of thousands on the streets demanding an end to the political patronage that, they believed, had helped - by omission if not commission - a paedophile ring to murder children and escape arrest. It has not been a time of many laughs for anyone.

All the same, it was with a mixture of knowing winks and barely suppressed laughter that a parliamentary commission investigating another of the country's most mysterious scandals heard the evidence of M Marnette. Belgian newspapers usually refer to the portly M Marnette as "un superflic", and mean it. In fact, his evidence was more reminiscent of Inspector Clouseau.

"Yes, we used to go the bars, the gay and lesbian clubs and the sex parties," he said, his bushy moustaches bristling at the memory of his past achievements. Infiltrating such establishments was no easy matter; it was not a job to be done wearing "jeans and a leather jacket".

As for M Marnette, he was clearly a master of disguise. "I wasn't going to hang round wearing my holster while everyone else was either naked or in dressing gowns. But if I was in a dressing gown, that didn't mean that I was doing any sexual acrobatics myself."

The vision of leading politicians, judges and policemen indulging in orgies may tickle the Belgian taste for the absurd. But the light relief provided by tales of lax morals in high places is wearing off. For the "ballet rose" is also the perfect metaphor for the corruption, freemasonry and the vulnerability to blackmail of the country's political 'lite.

The public will be learning more about the "ballets roses", and the identities of dignitaries who attended them, from the evidence of other policemen who "infiltrated" this exotic demi-monde. It is a world of outwardly respectable private clubs in discreet suburbs of Brussels, Antwerp and Liège, but where, on arrival, members remove not just their coats, but their tops, bottoms and underwear as well.

For the moment, it looks increasingly unlikely that the two inquiries obsessing Belgians will yield new insights into how those in power exploit their positions, let alone name the guilty men or bring improvements. But M Marnette's testimony, and his naming in camera of two senior establishment figures who performed at the "ballets roses", caused a minor sensation.

Many had dismissed the "ballets roses" as Belgium's Loch Ness monster - much talked about, rarely seen and its existence never proved. But now it emerges that they were not the only exotic entertainment enjoyed by the ruling classes.

The "ballet rose" itself implies the presence of young, but not necessarily under-age, girls. To cater for other tastes, there are also "ballets bleus" (young men), "partouzes" (run-of-the-mill orgies) and even "ballets de confiture" (apparently extreme Right wingers like to strip and smear themselves with jam).

The parliamentary inquiry truly gripping the nation is the one examining the case of Marc Dutroux, who has confessed to murdering four young girls, and the way it was handled by the authorities.

The second inquiry has caused less of a furore, but the crimes it is reviewing, dating back 10 years, were even bloodier and more traumatic than the

paedophile murders. These were the spectacular series of hold-ups, known as the Brabant killings that terrorised Belgium in the early 1980s and claimed the lives of 28 people. They remain unsolved.

The usual explanation is that the killings were an attempt by the far Right, in league with the security services, to destabilise the country. But the suspicion has long persisted that some of the victims were not gunned down at random, but targeted because of their links to "ballets roses".

Hugo Coveliers, a Belgian senator, argues that the "ballets roses" are not independent of one another, but part of a system "which operates to this day and is used to blackmail the highly placed people who take part".

To many who hoped that rage at last year's paedophile scandal could be channelled into political reform, the "ballets roses" are at best a digression, at worst an attempt by the authorities to throw the two inquiries off the scent of the real villains. The very existence of the two commissions of inquiry has signalled a desire for change. The public may take further encouragement from the fact that, for the first time

since the armed robberies began in 1982, police last month released identikit photos of possible suspects.



The Speaker, The Rep. & The Priest

In 1999 U.S. House Speaker Dennis Hastert was invited to the Bilderberg meeting and it is unclear whether he attended. It does not matter if he showed up or not as he certainly supports the agenda of this weird group. If the European branch of this strange secret society were not bad enough, the American branch takes the cake when it comes to sexual cover-up. On October 5, 2006 CNN reported that Rep. Mark Foley had seduced underage page boys and Hastert had protected him for many years. The cover-up surrounding Foley's sexual hi-jinks is indicative of the power structure's perverted nature. Hastert went to great lengths to ensure that Foley remained able to molest children without accountability. Furthermore, it turns out that Foley himself was a victim of a Catholic pedophile priest named Fr. Anthony Mercierca who abused the future Republican leader when he was just a teenager.

The Hastert Foley Timeline

2001: Some congressional pages were allegedly warned about Foley, according to Page Alumni Association President Matthew Loraditch. (*ABC World News with Charles Gibson*)

2003: Foley, a Florida Republican, reportedly writes sexually explicit instant messages to a male House page using the screen name "Maf54." (Associated Press)

May 2003: Foley faces questions about his sexual orientation as he prepares to run for a Senate seat in Florida. He later drops out of the race. (AP)

Fall 2005: A former page contacts the office of his sponsor, Rep. Rodney Alexander, a Louisiana Republican, about E-mails he had received from Foley that asked about the boy's age, then 16, and his birthday and requested a picture. (AP)

Oct. 1, 2006: Hastert writes a letter to Attorney General Alberto Gonzales asking for an investigation of Foley's conduct. Yet Hastert's office was informed of Foley's sexual emails to pages two years before the sex story broke. (Yahoo News)



Grandson of a Beast?

On April Fool's Day 2006 an article entitled *George W. Bush, Barbara Bush, and Aleister Crowley* by Joseph Cannon was posted on cannonfire.com. This article claimed that George W. Bush could be the grandson of Satanist Aleister Crowley via his maternal grandmother Pauline Pierce. At first this notion seemed an absurd joke but some simple fact checking makes this assertion quite possible. Pauline Pierce was definitely a disciple of Crowley in Paris in 1924. The future grandmother of the 43rd President of the United States traveled with publisher Frank Harris (a man as sexually creepy as The Great Beast) and adventuress Nellie O'Hara to study with Crowley. In his sick world-view Crowley would not have tolerated a woman who refused him sex so it is most certain that Pauline Pierce had relations with The Great Beast. Pierce returned from Paris in early October 1924 and Barbara Pierce (Bush) was born on June 8, 1925 which could make Crowley the father. The only way to determine the truth would be for a member of the Bush family and a descendant of Crowley's to take a DNA test to prove or disprove this extraordinary claim. Some questions only hard science can answer and this is one of them.

The Brownville Satanic Cult and President George W. Bush

The bodies of fifteen people were found in a mass grave at a ranch outside the Mexican border town of Matamoros, near Brownsville, Texas. Authorities blamed the killings on Satanic rituals and human sacrifice. (26)

"It was horrible," Cameron County Sheriff Alex Perez told a news conference. "It was like a human slaughterhouse." (27)

There was evidence of cannibalism at the scene. Five suspects were arrested and later convicted of murder. The suspects were involved in drug smuggling, and prayed to the Devil for protection from police, authorities said. The bodies were found in a field along with evidence of voodoo or magic. (28)

George W. Bush was living in Brownville, Texas during the time of the murders and was suspected of being a member of the Satanic cult. When he was elected Governor of Texas he saved a death row inmate named Henry Lee Lucas from execution. Lucas claimed to have been a hit man for a Satanic cult. Why did Bush grant clemency to this mass murderer? During the 2000 Presidential elections, Bush was questioned concerning his relationship to this cult. His reply neither confirmed nor denied the accusation and he quickly tried to change the subject. This constitutes a close link between criminal and elite Satanists. (29) The reply of candidate Bush is quite chilling:

"I will not stoop to discussing that," said Bush during a campaign stop at a Bay Area software-packaging plant. "We've got people across this country without health care, a broken educational system, taxes that are way too high, and all you want to talk about is something **THAT MAY OR MAY NOT HAVE HAPPENED** 16 years ago? I'm sorry, but I find that offensive. " (my emphasis) (30)



The Strange Saga of Jeff Gannon

Jeff Gannon, whose real name appears to be James Dale Guckert was a White House-credentialed fake reporter from a bogus news agency called *Talon News*, who was exposed as a fraud in early 2005. Gannon was cited by the *Washington Post* as possibly having access to an alleged internal CIA memo that named Joseph Wilson's wife, Valerie Plame, as a covert CIA agent. He was well-known for asking loaded pro-Republican questions at White House press briefings.

Gannon himself is a registered user at Free Republic and has made various boasts on those boards about being involved in breaking various stories, including (but certainly not limited to) the CBS memos regarding Bush's service in National Guard and the fact that liberals want to eliminate Christmas. Bobby Eberle who owns *Talon*, posts on Free Republic as well, and Gannon had his own weird weekly radio program on *Right Talk*, streamed through Free Republic. (31)

Fellow journalists became suspicious of Gannon's real motivations because he was often called upon by White House briefers and his statements were always pro-Bush yet no one ever heard of him or his agency. After doing some research, it was revealed that Jeff Gannon's real name was apparently James Dale Guckert. (32)

Even more outrageous is the fact that Gannon had several web sites which operated as a male prostitution services and featured nude photos of this White House correspondent. The sites, Hotmilitarystud.com and Militaryescorts4m.com, offered military kinky sex sessions for money where Gannon would wear a Marine Corps drill sergeant's uniform and verbally abuse customers during sexual relations. Gannon used the fake name of "Bulldog" on his male prostitution web pages. Bulldog was given daily passes to the White House briefing room, which exempted him from the normal security check by the secret service and FBI for reporters, a rare and unusual privilege. (33)

It also turns out that Bulldog spent several nights in the White House, one time during an official state visit by Prime Minister Tony Blair. What were Bulldog and Blair doing? (34)

If this strange set of events were not strange enough, Gannon bears an uncanny resemblance to Johnny Gosch, who was a twelve-year-old boy abducted in 1982 and is the subject of Noreen Gosch's *Why Johnny Can't Come Home*. In this book Noreen Gosch gives the story of how her son went missing while doing his paper route and was the subject of a huge police manhunt, which never found the missing boy. In 1997, according to the book, Johnny turned up at Noreen's house and told her that he had been abducted by a Satanic cult and went through a system of brainwashing wherein he was used as a sex slave in occult rituals. Johnny warned his mother that both their lives were in danger and that he was still under the control of the Satanic cult and that he feared that he would be killed if he ever went public with the information. (35)

It is interesting to note that the name Johnny Gosch, James Guckert and Jeff Gannon all have the initials J.G. Johnny Gosch looks like a schoolboy photo of Jeff Gannon and even has the same facial scar. The Jeff Gannon nude Bulldog photos also shows a birthmark which Johnny Gosch had according to the FBI report Noreen Gosch had filed with them in 1982.

Noreen Gosch has repeatedly contended that Johnny was taken by a Satanic cult related to the Boy's Town scandal in the mid-80s. Franklin Credit Union chief Laurence King, who was a high-ranking Republican Party member, was involved in a cabal involving the sexual exploitation of children. King allegedly procured boys for sex parties involving high ranking members of the Reagan/Bush White House. King went to jail for a variety of crimes involving money laundering. (36)

Noreen Gosch also wrote about a government CIA agent named George Paul Bishop who became involved in the investigation concerning her missing son:

April 1983, six months after the kidnapping of my son, a young man identifying himself as George Paul Bishop contacted me by phone. He told me an international kidnapping/pornography ring had taken my son. I asked, "How do you know that to be true, can you prove it!" He replied, "I work for a government agency which is investigating pedophile organizations. And there are indicators in your case that suggests your son was taken by such an organization. We feel he is being used for pornography and prostitution." All clues were pointing to the kidnapping being organized and not that of a lone criminal. I found it difficult to believe and accept Paul Bishop, CIA Asset made a short trip to Des Moines, July 31, 1984. Before Paul left Des Moines, he created a very intricate map of the Johnny's crime scene, indicating time sequence of each aspect of the kidnapping. Paul dated and initialed the map using GPB (George Paul Bishop).

During this time, I had also been working with Senator Grassley from Iowa, he had been particularly helpful in facilitating with the FBI. Many times Paul Bishop would call me from Senator Grassley's office, when finished speaking with me, he would hand the phone to one of Grassley's aides who I was familiar with. That convinced me Paul was an accepted visitor on the hill in Washington. A short time later, I received my invitation to testify in Washington D.C. before Senator Arlan Specter's Hearing on organized crime and its relationship to kidnapping.

Paul Bishop, accompanied by two men arrived at the hotel to drive me to the Capitol for the hearing. The bodyguards accompanied us always a few steps behind us. They were dressed well but business casual rather than suits. Paul looked very polished, wearing a dark brown suit. As I entered the room, I noted there were reporters everywhere from ABC, NBC, CBS television, radio, newspaper and magazine. I recognized Special Agent Kenneth Lanning, a member of the Behavioral Science Unit of the FBI Training Division at Quantico, VA, I walked towards him, saying, "Hello, I am Noreen Gosch", extending my hand to shake his. He pulled back and said, "We know who you are." With that statement there was a definite chill in the air. It was as though the FBI resented me being asked to testify." (this is a common complaint) (37)

It is no wonder that George Paul Bishop knew so much about the operations of the pedophile ring as it turns out he was a member of it. According to a February 4, 2005 Associated Press report about an arrest in Virginia:

Two men were charged with making child pornography Monday after police found an explicit video in one man's home. George Bishop, 46, of Chantilly, and Richard Evans, 66, of Annandale, videotaped at least one victim, a 16-year-old boy, Fairfax County police said. Detectives searched Bishop's home and found the tape after receiving a complaint that he was allowing teenage boys to drink and use drugs. Bishop and Evans were both being held at the Fairfax County Adult Detention Center. Police are searching for other possible victims. (38)

Noreen Gosch has confirmed that this George Bishop is the same man who was a government agent who assisted her in dealing with the investigation of her missing son. Bishop must have been part of some smoke screen to deflect attention off of Noreen's efforts to find her son.

One of the Boys Town victims was one Paul Bonacci, who testified in court proceedings that he helped kidnap Johnny Gosch into this ring in 1982. This is where it gets really interesting. Bonacci also testified that he was forced in July 1984 to participate in a homosexual/pedophilic/necrophilic orgy at (what has since been identified as) the Bohemian Grove; all of which was filmed. And according to Bonacci, the man in charge of the filming was someone who was picked up in Las Vegas on the plane headed to the Grove, a man who Bonacci was told was one Hunter S. Thompson. (39)

No doubt most people who came across this information in the past and were familiar with Thompson's work dismissed the idea that the man behind the camera could have been the famous writer. After all, this was a man who has been fighting the likes of Nixon and Bush his entire career.

But could Hunter S. Thompson have been brought to the Grove by someone who presented it as an opportunity to investigate what the power elite was up to behind closed doors? Could Thompson have quickly found himself in over his head, compromised, by virtue of his very presence at this horrific crime, by the men he thought he was investigating undercover? (40)

Thompson actually wrote about a cabal of pedophiles in his final book *Hey Rube* (2004):

The autumn months are never a calm time in America. . . . There is always a rash of kidnapping and abductions of schoolchildren in the football months. Preteens of both sexes are traditionally seized and grabbed off the streets by gangs of organized perverts who traditionally give them as Christmas gifts to each other to be personal sex slaves and playthings. [p. 3]

In any case, Hunter S. Thompson was found dead of an apparent "suicide" just a few hours after the news broke about a possible Gannon connection to Johnny Gosch. (41)

The only way to ascertain beyond reasonable doubt whether Gannon is Johnny Gosch would be to conduct a DNA test on both Noreen Gosch and Jeff Gannon. This will not likely ever occur, however, as Gannon claims in a March 20, 2005 *New York Times* interview that his mother was threatened since the story broke. He does not name who his mother is, nor has he ever mentioned the Johnny Gosch case on his website. (42)

On June 3, 2005 I (William H. Kennedy) was a radio guest on *A Closer Look* hosted by Michael Corbin and harped on the Gannon case and how I thought Gannon was Gosch. I also pointed out that I thought the only way to get to the bottom of this situation was for Jeff Gannon to take the DNA test with Noreen Gosch. To my utter surprise the follow email was sent to me directly after the show:

From: "Media Relations" <media.relations@jeffgannon.com>

To: whkinfol@yahoo.com

Subject: Jeff Gannon/Johnny Gosch

Date: Fri, 3 Jun 2005 13:18:05 -0400

Sir

It is my understanding that you appeared on a radio program today where you said that I am Johnny Gosch. I am NOT Johnny Gosch. I demand that you never repeat this allegation, otherwise I will initiate legal action against you.

Jeff Gannon

I confirmed that this threatening email was from Jeff Gannon.

On July 8, 2005 Noreen Gosch was interviewed on *A Closer Look* and Jeff Gannon actually called into the program and denied that he was Johnny. Michael Corbin requested that Gannon take the DNA test to prove beyond a shadow of a doubt that he was not the missing Gosch. Jeff Gannon agreed to take the test but as of May 2006 he has not done so. The embattled Gannon never took the DNA test although given ample time.

It can only be concluded that Jeff Gannon is Johnny Gosch and he can initiate legal action against me for expressing this opinion if he so desires. However, it would simplify things if he just took the test.

Satanic Crime: A Threat in the New Millennium

From all the evidence gathered in this study it can be reasonably concluded that Satanic criminals pose a threat to the safety and civil liberties of all people. This extends from self-styled Satanists who become serial killers to upper level elite Satanists who belong to Luciferian secret societies. The mainstream media downplays and minimizes stories which involve Satanism as part and parcel of the crimes reported. This is true in many of the cases of the serial killers covered in earlier chapters. Most of the advertising dollars are paid to the mainstream media outlets by major corporations who are owned and operated by members of the elite Luciferian secret societies mentioned above. These power brokers want as little coverage concerning the diabolical aspects of a crime because it serves to ward

off awareness of the subject of Satanism. By doing so these power brokers deflect attention off of their own Luciferian affiliation.

The case studies in this book support these claims. Manson had always been depicted as a mad man and few people realize how sophisticated his *Helter Skelter* Devil Worship really was and how he identified himself as Lucifer. Most of the general public believes that David Berkowitz acted alone even though he has stated numerous times that he was part of a Satanic group. Richard Ramirez is depicted as a “lone nut” killer and few people realize his association with Anton LaVey. No one in the United States even knows who Varg Vikernes and Paul Dutroux are or what they did. The press always downplayed Ricky Kasso’s Satanism and emphasized his drug problems. Few have even ever heard of Joe Fiorella, not to mention the fact he was a Church of Satan member and a necrophile. Harris and Klebold are never depicted as Satanists even though Harris posted an image of Lucifer orchestrating his actions just a few hours before he shot up his school. Jeff Weise is depicted as a loner and the news agencies hardly cover the fact that he spiked his hair up into Devil’s horns and claimed spirits haunted his room. Andrea Volpe and Rodrigo Orias are unknown names even though both of these Satanists butchered people in weird occult rites.

The negligence in the coverage of these cases stems from the media’s complicity in downplaying Satanism, which comes directly from the corporations who pay for advertising time. He who pays the piper calls the tune. Even during the so-called Satanic Panic of the 1980s, the media only covered dubious cases like the McMartin and Fells Acre pre-schools and downplayed the role of Satanism in the cases of Kasso and Ramirez. The elite Satanists who control vast blocks of wealth do not want this subject covered by the mainstream media.

Politicians throughout the world likewise deliberately downplay the role of Devil Worship in criminal activity. The deliberate governmental attempts at cover-up in the Dutroux scandal in Belgium acts as an acute example as has been demonstrated. A great deal of Satanism involves child molestation and pornography. This area too is downplayed by governments. According to a January 19, 2003 article in Britain’s *Sunday Herald*:

Operation Ore, the police inquiry which plans to arrest a further 7000 men across the UK for buying child pornography online is set to end in disaster with many suspects walking free.

Detective Chief Inspector Bob McLachlan, former head of Scotland Yard's pedophile unit, told the Sunday Herald that the lack of urgency in making arrests will lead to suspects destroying evidence of downloading child pornography before they are arrested.

The Sunday Herald has also had confirmed by a very senior source in British intelligence that at least one high-profile former Labor Cabinet minister is among Operation Ore suspects. The Sunday Herald has been given the politician's name but, for legal reasons, cannot identify the person. There are still unconfirmed rumors that another senior Labor politician is among the suspects. The intelligence officer said that a rolling Cabinet committee had been set up to work out how to deal with the potentially ruinous fall-out for both Tony Blair and the government if arrests occur.

Since the September 2002 Operation Ore arrest of Detective Constable Brian Stevens, a key officer in the inquiry into the murders of Holly Wells and Jessica Chapman, the public have been aware that wanted suspects had downloaded child pornography from a US website called Landslide.

McLachlan, who was one of the main officers on Operation Ore before his retirement last year, said: "Sufficient warnings have been given that if people haven't got rid of their computers then they are either stupid, don't believe they'll be arrested or are so obsessive about their collections that they can't destroy it. As time goes on, the chances of successful prosecutions will diminish with speed as the information out there must impact on the offenders."

With only 1200 men arrested so far, McLachlan says that claims by police chiefs and the government that they were prioritizing pedophile crime were smoke and mirrors. Pedophilia is still not a priority on the Home Office's National Policing Plan for 2003-06. McLachlan claimed that before he left Scotland Yard his team were under-staffed, over-worked, and under-funded and reduced to using free software from computer magazines.

Police say that the list of rich and famous Operation Ore suspects would fill newspaper front pages for an entire year.

There is no way to tell how much of Britain's pedophilia problem has Satanic links but it is clear from the Dutroux case that many of the child sex rings have Luciferian aspects. In the United States, the situation seems to be that the upper echelons of the government do as much as they can to stifle law enforcement from investigating charges of Satanic crime. The example of CIA agent George Paul Bishop's actual participation in child pornography after he allegedly tried to help Noreen Gosch find her missing son is indicative of depths to which the government seems to be sinking.

President George W. Bush's refusal to answer questions about the Skull and Bones and his possible involvement in the Brownville Satanic cult illustrates how high level a problem this situation has become. His initial silence after the shootings at the Indian reservation, where Jeff Weise, a boy who sculpted his hair into Devil's horns before he killed, demonstrates that Bush avoids dealing with any situation that involves Satanic elements. Such non-action deflects attention away from the fact that Bush himself belongs to Satanic organizations. By remaining silent on the matter no one will ask questions about the President's membership in the Skull and Bones or the Bohemian Grove.

Consider, that six billion people live on this planet and that only two billion have a basic standard of living. Four billion human beings live in squalid conditions, go to bed hungry every night and have no health care to speak of. Most of these people have not even used a telephone in their lives. Of the two billion who live well only five or six thousand actually control all of the wealth. The majority of rulers on the top of the political and economic pyramid either belong to a Luciferian secret society or are somehow under the control or influence of elite Devil worshipers. To reach the tip of this pyramid one must be a member of one of these Luciferian groups. The public must be informed and educated concerning this horrible state of affairs or Satanic crime will remain a threat in the new millennium and the powers that be will continue raising hell.

End Notes

1-6) Robbins, Alexandra, *Secrets of the Tomb*, Back Bay Books 2003.

2-13) *Dark Secrets*: <http://www.infowars.com/bg1.html>

14-16) Domhoff, G. William: http://sociology.ucsc.edu/whorulesamerica/power/bohemian_grove.htm&

Philips, Peter: <http://libweb.sonoma.edu/regional/faculty/phillips/bohemianindex.html>

17-18) Cohen, Alexandra, "Some Post Christian Realities"

2001:<http://www.freerepublic.com/forum/a3b2003ac2eec.htm>

9-25) Frenkiel, Olenka, "Belgium's silent heart of darkness" *Observer* 5/5/02

26-28) AP, "Complete News from Brownsvile" various articles: <http://www.holysmoke.org/wb/wb0189.htm>

29-30) Skolnick, Sherman, "GWB: Brownsville Satanic Cult Member?":

<http://www.elfis.net/phorum/read.php?f=2&i=103&t=103>

31-33) Stuart, John: [http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=NhC6xcrUWck&search=Jeff%20Gannon & Truth](http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=NhC6xcrUWck&search=Jeff%20Gannon+%26+Truth),

James: <http://www.total411.info/2005/02/jeff-gannon-johnny-gosch-hunter.html>

34) Liberty Think, "Jeff Gannon entertained Tony Blair":

http://www.infowars.com/articles/us/gannon_entertained_blair.htm

35) Gosch, Noreen, "Johnny's Story":

<http://www.johnnygosch.com/index.cfm?id=1386&fuseaction=browse&pageid=32>

37) Noreen Gosch interview on *Mysteries of the Mind* 6/22/04.

38) TIA, "Franklin Cover-up figure arrested on new charges":

<http://www.total411.info/2005/02/franklin-cover-up-figure-arrested-on.html>

39-42) TIA, "Jeff Gannon, Johnny Gosch, Hunter S. Thompson and Bohemian Grove Snuff Porn":

<http://www.total411.info/2005/02/jeff-gannon-johnny-gosch-hunter.htm>

